

*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**Observation: Raelian's Clone Project**

The Raelians, an alien-worshipping group, have claimed to created the first human clone in late December 2002. Human clones have been around for a while, but that's a whole other story. The Raelians claim to be wanting to develop clones to create "eternal life". For them, as for the sequential aliens, "eternal life" means physical immortality. The reptilians have been attempting this for millennia before Earther humans were created. They still have not found anything beyond cloning and drug extensions because there is nothing else to discover. The search for physical immortality is a search for what can never be. It is an internal search for something that already exists: the immortal you as your Higher Self.

The Raelians founder claims to have been met by one of the standard Grey aliens. The aliens have nothing but their own interests in mind. They always have been that way. They have succeeded, via this stooge of theirs, with several thousand Earthers. It's the same old, but obviously successful story of *getting the Earthers sidetracked again*. This is *also* a Lightsider technique for deceiving Earthers to *believe* that the physical body is the object of fascination rather than the spirit.

The Raelians *believe* that aliens cloned humans on Earth. Cloning was part of the alien genetic scientists' program, true, but it was *not* the core way Ancient Earthers became today's Earthers. The Raelian founder says the *Grey alien* he met was oozing with "love". Yeah, so oozing that he dazzled the guy with *sequential alien beliefs* of *physical immortality*. The quest for physical immortality is alien. Earthers who quest for that are body ID controlled.

The constant running to allopathic doctors for the slightest discomfort to the physical body is a reflection of 'I am my body, the body is supreme'. This is an alien concept and one that is heavily propagandized on Earth, *especially* in North America. Drugs for everything you can imagine. "They will extend your life". They will not. The *manner* and *time* of your incarnation's death was chosen by *you* and *that* cannot be changed.

The media is dealing with the Raelian cloning with the poo-poo of the propaganda machine because Raelians mention the alien connection. Propaganda controllers would rather you don't look to the alien connection and how the aliens taught cloning/genetics to Earthers. However, in the meantime, these *same* Earthers proceed with *their* genetic/cloning methods. The Raelians are just another arm of the alien meddlers to sidetrack simultaneously incarnating Higher Selves.

**Observations: Aliens Who Cry Wolf**

There were 2 events tooted about by an alien group. One was the 'arrival of the Nibiru mothership' in Earth orbit "on Sept 18,2001". The other was on Sept 21, it was "written in stone" that 'a meteor would hit either Italy or Morocco'. Obviously neither happened. 'Written in stone', please! Of course the Nibiru are lurking out there, but what happened to the meteor. This alien group has predicted SO many things of which zero have happened.

Then, they want to split hairs between 'probability' and 'prediction'. 'Written in stone' is 100%. What does that tell you? What I've been saying all along: that the aliens have their own agenda. They keep placing hoops out there to see which Earthers will jump through them. The lesson here is the aliens have cried wolf FAR too often to be given credibility



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

AND their agenda outweighs the illusion of assistance. NEVER believe the aliens unless they can prove what they say. They will continue to cry wolf - guaranteed.

**Observations: Aliens and 'Spirituality'**

There are different groups of people who are followers of alien 'spirituality'. These people hang on every word that the aliens spout. These are religions just as any other Earther religion since they seek answers from *external* sources. While the information/observations I share are from MY Higher Self, *you* should be communicating with *your* Higher Self to see which, if any, of the topics I share are needed on YOUR path.

One Lightsider site, which will remain nameless, is so enthralled with every word coming from this alien group that they need alien 'blessings' on what they want to pursue and believe. Of course, as with all religions, there is the priesthood. The priesthood of alien religions is the 'contactee'. This particular Lightsider group has their 'holy father' contactee who remains in the distance, as do almost all 'holy fathers'. This calls for at least a 'pope' (moderator) who communicates the will of the aliens as given to the holy father who gives it to the 'pope' to dispense to the masses. Of course there are also lesser priests in this group, the die-hard defenders of the faith who will pounce on those who DARE to disagree with the 'sacred' aliens. The moderator will also call on followers to attempt to disrupt sites that don't follow the 'word' of their alien masters.

The followers are upset that what I've written in M5 doesn't mesh with what the aliens say. No surprise there. "What should we do?", they cry. The moderator is quite uneducated as it is (another hallmark of alien manipulation choices). "Matrix 5 is taking us to another way of thinking, popey dearest. Will the aliens SAVE us from Matrix 5?".

To this I'd say to that group, if Matrix 5 is SO upsetting and contrary to what you've been told to believe, you can choose NOT to read it and forget anything you've read. What's so hard about that? Well, it could just be that these people's Higher Selves are causing the unsettled feeling in their respective incarnations in order to get them to think for themselves. It would require a *major* change of mind for these incarnations and a *new perspective*. They FEAR this, so are looking for the moderator to calm them. So much fuss over a book that *they never had to read* or 'were forced' to read. Ah, well, it can be interesting to observe, at least for a while.

These types tend to be so awed just with the *idea* of aliens and their advanced TECHNOLOGY that they don't hesitate to *give their power away* to them. It's one thing for the aliens to talk about alien, 3rd density matters, but another thing to talk about spirituality and saying *their* spirituality applies to Earthers who are undergoing a different experiential path. BUT then, that's part of the Game.

As always, with *everything* you hear (even from me), go WITHIN and see what YOUR Higher Self want/needs to hear. Beware of followers of alien beliefs. They're like the alien version of Jehovah's Witlesses (intended spelling) who will try to keep you from the ONLY source of pure guidance FOR YOU, your Higher Self and you cannot connect to within as long as you are dazzled by without.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**Alien Technology & the Game**

One alien worshipping, Lightsider site message talks about the technological advancements of the aliens with great awe. The message mentions, "they are in advance of us ... at least the beings from Zenetae Andromeda have a lot going for them and yes, having been where we are themselves, they could tell you fairly accurately as to their advancement." This is exactly what the *sequentially* incarnating Higher Selves *want* us (simultaneous incarnates) to concentrate on - technological advancement *rather than* spiritual Advancement. External as opposed to internal progress. This is one reason why sequential incarnates take SO much longer to progress because they crave technological/external advancement.

The aliens have been dazzling Earthers since Earther humans were both genders in one being. Yes, that's been part of the Game, BUT the goal for simultaneous incarnates is to move *from* the Game. That can be done *only* by closing down the attraction to alien/technological 'rhinestone advancements'. The cheap dazzle is their lure to be 'like us'. Instead, simultaneous incarnates must learn *not* to be like them but true to their own Path, which, I've been telling you about in the M5 materials, is unique. One of the parts that the aliens play in the Game is to attempt to delay the simultaneous incarnates from discovering their true nature. Technology has been one of their prime methods of doing so AND it has worked well for them.

Low incarnations *worship* alien technology, mid level incarnates *crave* alien technology, low through mid-Advanced levels put *aliens on pedestals* and tag them 'space brothers'. The veil of alien deceptions is torn in the Very Advanced stages and seen for what it is in your Awakened Final Incarnation.

This stage, reached by your Awakened Final Incarnation, is a necessary part of the escape from the Game - when the alien glitter is discovered *by you* for what it *is* and, more importantly, what it *isn't*. A question I've brought up before of why aliens, when seeking contactees, always seem to choose the uneducated or someone who they scan as who will hold them in awe, is now answered. They would avoid anyone who is in a Very Advanced stage or higher (Dominant or Final Incarnates) because these levels have had the alien smoke screen dispersed (by Awakened Final Incarnation). Think of the aliens as the person behind the screen (as in the *Wizard of Oz*) using technology (big green head with fire and smoke to enhance the image) to dazzle Dorothy & friends. Once Dorothy saw the man behind the curtain (alien veil being removed), she saw the wizard (alien) for what he is and is not. The same happens to you. By your Awakened Final Incarnation, your veil will be taken away and you will see, in this example, the aliens *for what they really are*.

Since the aliens are not spiritually Advanced (in comparison to those beyond mid-Advanced levels), even though they would like us to think otherwise, they'd be quite insecure with the prospect of dealing with Very Advanced or, <gasp> and Awakened Final Incarnations. This is one of the reasons why they tippy-toe around, look for sycophantic/uneducated Earthers to carry their lofty sounding messages. A favorite alien pastime is skulking about the planet to avoid detection by the planet as a whole and look for other ways to derail Earther Higher Self incarnates. YET, alien groups have invaded other far less technologically advanced planets than Earth, BUT those planets are populated by other *sequential* incarnates! The 'you aren't developed enough' line is pure horseshit. They know it, but, like the man behind the curtain, they hope you don't.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

It won't be much longer before EndGame comes to Earth. Higher Self incarnates and we move on to bigger/better things. Then the aliens can crawl along at *their* spiritual levels without the fear of Earth. Higher Self incarnates.

**Sequential Technology Dependence & Spiritual Laziness**  
(Special Gold Edition Segment)

I have been observing, for many years, how people become dependent on technology and how this dependence fosters increased laziness in most cases. When I was teaching astrology, for example, for several years in the 80's, I *never* had one person in any of my classes who wanted to actually learn astrology. They were interested in how I could interpret their horoscopes or what program they could get to do the work for them. This was not because these people didn't have the ability to learn at least basic astrology, it was due to technological laziness.

One of the major problems in the Game, with the *introduction of technology*, is the accompanying desire to have more external objects do your work for you. When it is for manual labor, this is understandable. This is also only the first step in the deception. The next step comes with mental laziness. Calculators have made many people lazy in using their mind to do even basic math. Most children now are so dependent on calculators that they are relatively incapable of doing simple math without them.

Computers take that a big step forward. Yes, you can play neat games on computers as well as perform numerous other time saving tasks. The question to ask yourself is how have these and other technological devices given you the excuse to stop developing mentally. It was a rarity, when I taught through the early 90's, to find people who would read! They couldn't be bothered to read and had the lame excuses, "I don't have the time" or "I just don't like to read". This is pure laziness. They have given away their power to externals, in this case, technology.

Many people don't want to read, but they will watch a video or listen to a tape (technology doing the work for them). This lazy attitude causes spiritual stagnation. This is one of the *goals* of the aliens in *getting Earth to move from being a simultaneously incarnating planet to a sequential one*. The SLOW progress of the highly technological aliens has become the goal of the rulers of Earth. This is a misguided attempt to push back EndGame. *Sequential progression requires dependence on technology.*

I've tried to get people who took my classes to read. I gave them lists of books that would be a great assistance to their progression. These are books that would make them *think* and *assist in discovering who they are*. BUT "I just don't have the time to read" or "I just don't like to read...does it come on video?"! Incarnations, apart from minion, who are caught in this trap cannot Advance further than lower-Advanced. Mid-Advanced, Very Advanced and higher are driven *to read* and *to know*. This doesn't mean they don't use computers, but they know that the main sources of knowledge come from reading. If you can't be bothered to read, you are not ready for the knowledge. Higher knowledge is meant for those who want to *keep* their power.

The lack of interest in reading or the desire to read 'picture books' only makes these people dependent on those relative few who do read. *Matrix 5* is written for a certain level of person and one who wants to read and this means read more than just *Matrix 5*. Yet, the large number of people who have been unable to grasp significant portions of the materials



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

spawn those who look on "The Author" as the person who will be the one who holds *their* hand and Lightsidedly explains whatever *they* aren't ready for or unable to recognize in the materials. They expect *me* to do the work and then be *their* steppin-fetch-it to do *their* bidding because *they* are either too lazy or too incompetent. I will *NOT* have dependents. There are plenty of teachers (low-Advanced through mid-Advanced) who *want* dependents. I suggest you find one much closer to your current level, in that case.

People continue to come to me with questions that *they* can find the answers to IF *they* search. They are too lazy. There are those who have the ability to learn astrology, for example, but "don't have the time", "don't like dealing with people" or whatever, but it really comes down to not willing to take the time and effort required to learn. These people think that I should, therefore, 'be their personal astrologer' whenever they have the whim to know about themselves. "Check on that *for me*" or "I read such and such somewhere, so interpret that *for me*", is typical of what I get. I rarely use the phrase "do for me" to others because I've learned to do for myself. When they *know* you can do, they try to flock around you so you 'can do' for *their* lazy asses.

On the other hand, you are not able, in one incarnation, to be able to do everything for yourself. This is where *barter* comes in handy and is a very valid form of transaction. If you want something, what do you offer in exchange? Idiotic Lightsiders believe that they have 'the right to get whatever they want' for *no effort* on *their* part beyond vocalizing the request/demand. This is a Lightsider feature and one they match with *guilt* to get you to obey. Fuck that!

An example for myself: I am not a rune stone reader. I have no interest in rune stones. If I knew someone who could read them proficiently AND I wanted a reading, I would never go to them and request a reading without offering something in return. "Could you do a rune reading for me? I would be glad to do something in return for you." THAT'S how you approach a barter transaction. If you want someone to go out of their way to do something for you and *you* don't offer to go out of *your* way in return, you are in a polarity mode. Lightside (it's *your* obligation) or Darkside (it's all about *me*).

What also gets me is that when you point this out to the abuser/dependent-wanna-be, they immediately go into a defensive mode. The favorite '2 step' is "that's not what I meant". Look here, if it's 'not what you meant', then you'd better mature and learn to say what you fucking *mean* to say. I am not responsible for reading *your* mind and divining what the hell *you* mean. These people also don't accept responsibility for what THEY do. Notice: "it's not what I meant" means YOU don't understand. Fuck you...the responsibility is YOURS to convey what you mean. If the 2 step, guilt trip, oh-poor-me is your attitude, you will get fire back from me. Remember, over and over I say my materials are *not* for the spiritual kiddies.

The *root cause* of this lazy attitude, that I write about in this segment, comes from *technology*. In the old, far gone days, bartering of services was expected and honorable. Today, it's a rarity. The computer does it for me, so should you...on demand is the prevailing attitude. Creeping Darkside - it's all about me. I have written that we live in the Dark sector of this galaxy, the Dark sequential aliens have been messing with us and the sequential aliens are well along to changing Earth into a sequential planet.

I have NO time for the lazy, for those who don't like/want to read or to take the time to learn, for those who want me to 'take them on' as a dependent or for those who expect me to



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

'drop everything' for them. The Matrix 5 materials are Very Advanced and for Very Advanced and beyond incarnates.

**Sequential Influences, Individuality & The Game**  
(Special Gold Edition Segment)

"You are part of a *team*", "you are a *team member*", "you must think of *everyone else first*", "the *good of the whole* is more important than the *good of the individual*" - These are just SOME of the phrases that are drilled into you since birth. "What will the neighbors think?" is a concern of most people. This is *group approval*. Worrying about everyone else at your expense and *subverting individual growth to cater to the group* are SO common and SO expected. Something to remember about this constant whine of conformity is that it is based with sequential incarnates. This is the way of alien planets - *progress as a unit* and *stifle individuality*.

This *group mentality* is a facet of the Game that adds to the challenge of the simultaneously incarnating Higher Selves. This *doesn't* mean that there is nothing to be gained from working with a group on occasion. The main experience gained from working with groups is to *adapt ideas (that work for you)* from the group and alter them to fit your style thus making it a totally *new* concept. For example, I have taken numerous teachings and techniques taught to me by shamans, wiccans, Monroe, etc and altered them to work in a new way that works extremely well for me. If one of my shaman teachers was to examine a shamanic technique that I've developed, they would see parts that resemble what they taught, but with new twists and turns that are, for me, MUCH more effective. Most of the teachers you have do not like you to cross their lines and alter what they *believe* is dogma. Yet, you must do exactly *that* if you want to progress as an individual. The way of higher than 4th densities is *individual* in scope. You will learn just how *when you are ready*. Now, on Earth, it is up to you to find out *just how individual you can become*. By breaking the molds, you expand.

Each prime teacher I had was uncomfortable when I began to learn things that either they didn't teach or they didn't approve of. That didn't stop me. "He's off on another tangent", a couple of them said about me to other students who towed the line. Yep, and look where it's gotten me. If you are making others (peers, family, teachers) uncomfortable due to your desires to learn, that's just too damned bad! Go for it.

The 'group approval/disapproval action' is one of the main *control functions* of the Game and the sequential aliens on Earth. These are in place to help keep you "asleep" and to try and keep you from Advancing and (gasp) connecting to your Higher Self. This mechanism is something that you must and will overcome. These are more 'rocks' in the rocky path of those on the quick route.

My relatives cut me off mainly because I left the catholic church. My chief aunt demanded that I return to the church. "You must stay in the religion that your family is", she commanded back in 1987. A fork in the road for me although I didn't even hesitate to stick to my decisions. These relatives have not spoken to me since. Painful learning, but, when you chose the correct fork in the path, rewards follow. If someone asks me about family, I tell them that I have none. I don't. Remember '*family*' is a *body ID concept*. Blood is thicker than water but to spirit is where you must go and this requires that you leave 'blood' behind! This does *not* mean that you dump your family. What it *does* mean, at some time in one (or more) of your incarnations, you WILL have to make the *conscious choice* to develop



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

*individually* at the cost of body ID/group/society/religion demands. Some heavy doors opened for me after that and my learning increased tremendously. If I had chosen poorly, these opportunities would not have been there. My Higher Self made sure that I had the conviction to stick with it, though, and choosing the correct fork was assured.

When you are on a lower stage, you can and do make the 'wrong' BUT comfortable choice. You cave in to the groups demands, BUT you toyed with moving on and away from the group. That in itself is progress. The incarnations that fall back (1 step forward/2 steps back) *still did learn* and that learning *is* registered. It makes it easier for your other more Advanced incarnations to proceed. Do what your current incarnation must do, whatever that may be, but also remember what I have said here.

**Sequential Shenanigans & Abductions**  
(Special Gold Edition Segment)

There are several alien groups who are attempting to duplicate simultaneously incarnating Higher Self experiences without taking the simultaneous path. These aliens abduct Earther humans (non-minions) in order to try to duplicate primarily, by technological means, the wide emotional ranges we have. Although they do realize that this is part of the simultaneous experience, they wrongly believe they can find a means to duplicate it with their advanced technology alone. They are so dependent on technology that they believe that technology solves all. This is the optimum external power giveaway. There is no future or spiritual development to be found in allowing technology to be a substitute for genuine spiritual growth.

I remember when I was at the Monroe Institute hearing stories about aliens trying to use certain Monroe students to probe for clues to *technological duplication of emotions*. You would think that, after all the years of trying to do this, they would give up and know it is *not* possible from a technological perspective. Yes, you would think so *if you are spiritually Advanced* enough. They are *not* spiritually Advanced enough to recognize this. Therefore they continue to seek a technological solution to a spiritual problem.

These aliens usually use *fear projections* to get their subject to submit to them. They have learned that Earthers in fear will usually do *anything* to end the fear. This is one reason why they usually avoid any Earther who is Very Advanced or higher. It is too easy to turn the tables on them.

If the aliens get to being more invasive than the abductee's Higher Self will permit, the person's Higher Self will step in, in one way or another, to end the scenario. I have seen the aliens retreat in fear at the appearance of a Higher Self manifestation. Be aware, though, that alien abductions are also experiences and there are Higher Selves who will permit this *for the experience*, although watch is kept to make sure the aliens stay within the bounds *chosen* by that simultaneous Higher Self. If one dies due to alien abduction, it was because that person's Higher Self chose that manner of death. Remember, *nothing* severe can happen to an incarnation *if it is not in the experiential plan* of the Higher Self.

With alien abductions, the Sci-Fi channels 10 part series *Taken* and much more, the abduction scenario has gotten a new life after being on the back burner for about 10 years. This is partially due to the intended return of the Orion Empire and also due to EndGame. You have the power to drive the aliens away. You are your Higher Self. This is why the



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

aliens use fear as one of their main weapons in abductions. *Fear will inhibit you from consciously using your Higher Self abilities.* However, this will not stop the Higher Self from interceding, if necessary. . The bottom line is, as always, *to trust in your Higher Self.* If you are an abductee, it is ONLY because your Higher Self permits it for the experiences. Nothing will happen to you, in the abduction scenario, that the Higher Self does not permit.

**Sequentially Incarnating Higher Selves**  
(Special Gold Edition Segment)

I have given you a fair amount regarding simultaneously incarnating Higher Selves and those of us who are on that fast track path. Those who have read and understood those segments now have a decent amount of information on that topic. It is time to give you some more information on the *sequentially* incarnating Higher Selves. Is there a difference? Yes, indeed.

If you were to look at a *sequentially* incarnating Higher Self from the outside, you would see just a single energy thread emanating from that Higher Self. This represents the single incarnation that shim is experiencing. If you looked at a simultaneously incarnating Higher Self, you would see hundreds and hundreds of incarnational streams (the M5 cover is very good, but the incarnational streams cannot be properly demonstrated).

The single stream carries all the memories of that Higher Self once shim entered the Game. It does *not* carry the memories of the Higher Self! This is part of the Game's restrictions, although in the sequential path, the memories are cumulative and allowable. As long as the sequential path is kept, the memories remain of all incarnations since the first incarnation of the Game.

IF a sequential Higher Self becomes emboldened and decides to 'switch sides' and join the simultaneous path, the decision will cost all the active memories that incarnation had as a sequential path being. The memories are *still* there, but they remain within the Higher Self and inaccessible on shim's new path. You do hear, on occasion, of aliens visiting an Earther contact and telling them that he was one of them. The contactee, of course, does not remember. This is a bit of sour grapes with the interfering Higher Selves to the new simultaneously incarnating one. A zap from one team to another to try and confuse/derail that Higher Self's progress. The aliens pick an incarnation, almost entirely at this time period to shake up, due to EndGame.

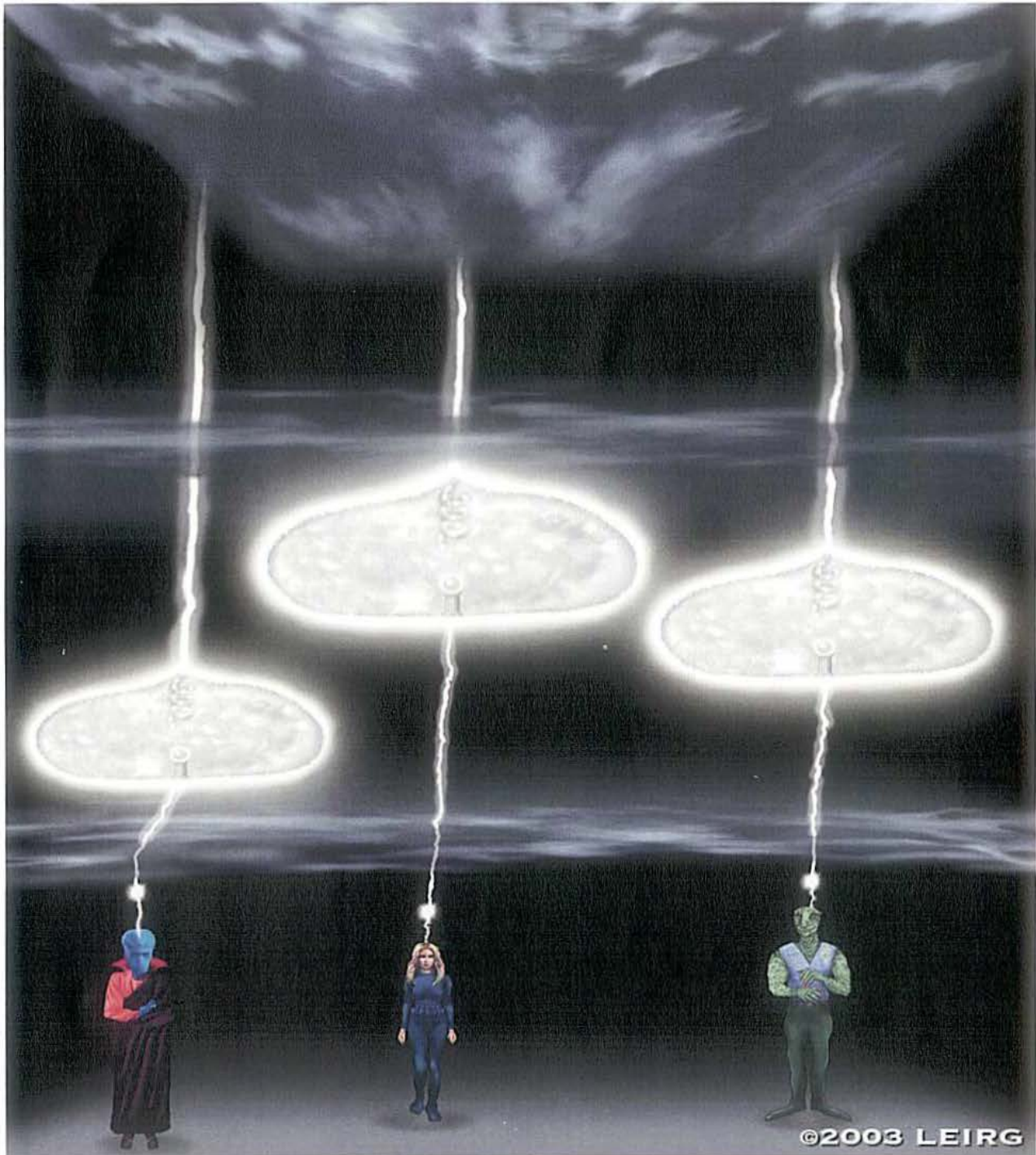
Inside a sequentially incarnating Higher Self, you would NOT find images of each incarnation that Higher Self has had in the Game. The images that I have reported inside a simultaneously incarnating Higher Self indicate *active* incarnations. They also indicate information entering that Higher Self at an enormous rate from each. This energy flow results in a brighter energy glow to these Higher Selves than the single strand of the sequential. The inner sequential Higher Self has smooth appearing walls.



### Higher Selves On the *Sequential* Incarnational Path

Graphic artist: Arthur J. Saarinen

This art is a representation of sequentially incarnating Higher Selves. Note that these Higher Selves do not have incarnational images on the inner walls. Refer to the Gold Edition segments that explain sequential Higher Selves for more details. Each sequential has only one (1) 3rd density experience at a time, hence one (1) energy stream. Compare this to the cover art's simultaneously incarnating Higher Selves. Note though that the cover art is not able to have hundreds and hundreds of incarnational streams. This is only a representation. The center sequential is not an Earther, but rather an Erran of the Pleiadian system similar to those who Billy Meier of Switzerland has contact with.









*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

Once that sequential Higher Self's chosen time of death nears, shim will choose the circumstances of shim's next incarnation. This is behind the past/next life idea so popular on Earth. It is understood among the sequentials. It does not apply to simultaneous incarnates, as I have said in another segment. The Raelians have recently said that their goal is to make Earthers able to clone themselves and transfer the consciousness of one incarnation into another. That statement IS sequential alien. Be aware of this and know it is not an idle comment or an imagined one.

The reptilians have mastered cloning so that certain royals are able to transfer from one body to a clone of the same with full memory. The Orion queen is the most notable adherent of that and does not allow just anyone to participate. The Raelian plan is a direct assault on the simultaneous incarnates and there is an alien group behind it. The reptilian royals are paranoid about being able to clone at royal levels. Most non-reptilian aliens don't concern themselves with this, but just incarnate in another about to be born body in the planetary race they have chosen.

The Nexus of Time in a *sequential* Higher Self, like the single strand, only contains a *single flow pair* of energies. The orb on the Nexus is not multi-faceted, but smooth. The sequentials will eventually *have to* reach Final Incarnation status, but that is far in the future and *we will be long gone when it arrives.* The sequential incarnates are 3rd density junkies with an addiction only each individual Higher Self can break. As long as the focus is on the body and not the spirit and experiences, they are focusing on what will take them an awfully long time to work out. They will do it, but what a LONG time.

Higher Selves on the simultaneous path do not associate with Higher Selves on the sequential path *while participating in the Game.* You should look at them as 'teams'. When in the Game, the 'teams' are separate. The simultaneous 'team' is quite small when compared to the sequential. The only movement comes when one Higher Self decides to change to simultaneous.

The Game will eventually end for the simultaneous Higher Selves as well. When the Game is completely done, there will be a lot of experience comparing.

### **Aliens ON Earth & The Game**

I have written about aliens, to a certain degree, in many past segments of Matrix 5. I have also stated aliens are on Earth. What I will now discuss, a bit, is about aliens ON Earth and the Game.

There are major Lightsider theories about Earth and the quarantine of Earth. One of them says that 'various fields supposedly surround Earth and keep aliens out'. This is a mix of truth and lie. There are different 4th density (astral) fields around Earth. They are the lowest of the astral and Robert Monroe talks about them in his trilogy. These fields do NOT and cannot keep aliens away from Earth. These are astral oriented fields and *not* protective force fields.

Aliens have been coming and going from Earth since the planet was created. Aliens are here today. Earth was chosen by the Higher Selves incarnating in the 3rd density as the simultaneous incarnating playground. The *rest* of the *galaxy* is sequential incarnation



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

playground. The warnings about Earth are due to *fear of contamination* of sequential incarnates by simultaneous incarnates. I've covered this previously.

When aliens come to Earth, they are STILL sequential. If an Earther Higher Self incarnate is abducted by aliens or voluntarily goes with them to another world, these Earthers are STILL simultaneous incarnations. Likewise any minions removed from Earth are still part of the Earth Planetary Spirit. The center of control for incarnations IS the Higher Self regardless of simultaneous or sequential incarnational paths. As I've also said previously, a Higher Self can choose to leave the sequential path and embark on the simultaneous. The reverse cannot happen. Evaluating the nature of the word, 'simultaneous' should make that clear.

When an alien dies on Earth, that Higher Self is NOT forced into the Earther incarnational path. This is another Lightsider fable. This alien will return in another sequential physical according to shim's Higher Self's Plan. This includes everyone from reptilian to pleadian to tau ceti and everyone in between. This is part of the Game on a wider scale. When the aliens are finally revealed on Earth (one way or another), they will be incarnations of a sequential path Higher Self. Remember, the more technology, the less they rely on the spirit. Don't be taken in by their dazzling technology. They ARE coming in one way or another as the Orion Empire intends to have its way with Earth/Earthers. (Review earlier segments on aliens for more.)

The *best perspective* one can keep in these very unusual times is to, above all else, remember who you REALLY are and *act accordingly* with regard to experiences YOUR Higher Self requires. The aliens play their polarity games and also try to keep you ignorant of who you really are. They WILL attempt to sweep you up into the Game at the cost of your Advancement. How you *react* to this will be *in accordance with* your Higher Self's plans for *that* unique incarnation.

The aliens are here already. They have *always* been here. They, in disguise, pass you on the street. They shape-shift into images that make you *believe* they are Earthers. They are in many positions of Earther authority. They FEAR being overtly discovered by the simultaneous incarnations. *Those who use fear are wearing the cloaks of their own fears.* They don't want the Game to end ... BUT it *will*, and the first to succeed and leave the Game will be those who have chosen - the simultaneous incarnational path Earther Higher Selves.

**Sequential Incarnates and the Merkaba**  
(Special Gold Edition Segment)

A very popular, Lightside technique in the world is forming a series of astral constructs or 'merkaba' around and within your physical body. There are heavy concentrations of this technique being called 'sacred', praying to the 'one god' and loads of references to 'unconditional love', the prime Lightside myth. If you were to read any of their web sites, you would a sugar shock from their descriptions and postings. Not only this but they'll give you the prayers to fit your religious background, so eager are they to get you to buy into this trap.

Cutting through all the knee-bending shit, you will see artwork of the complex design they use. Notice in most of them you can find, in the center, the triangle up over the triangle down. This is the 6 pointed star usually referred to as the 'star of David' which has nothing to do with the fictional king of the bible, but was used by the Rothschild house of Europe.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

David Icke has more information on that if you want it. However this 'star' is older than that by far. The triangle point up is the symbol for the Orion sciences divisions (genetics, etc) and the triangle point down is the symbol for the Orion military. Many of their ships have the 6 pointed star on them to indicate Orion Empire fleet. I have mentioned this in an earlier segment.

These complex 'merkaba patterns' and creations form more filters on the astral to attempt to interfere with your Higher Self's connection to the incarnation during EndGame. Fluffy descriptions of 'ascended masters' (THAT alone should set off warning bells within you) who descend (how nice of them!) to the 3rd density to help Earthers unite as a planet and progress as one is PURE sequential alien interference and, also, specifically part of the Game. It is another attempt to add more filters beyond the physical ones that their genetic science instilled in Earthers long ago. By strengthening these internal filters with astral filters, the incarnation will find itself stagnant in a Lightside loop. Giving away your power, once again, to external deities, angels and a 'hierarchy of superior beings' is a major new age religion demand of its followers. This is also part of their plan to make Earth a sequential planet and rid it of those bothersome simultaneous incarnates.

I find it interesting that they seem to use gold light as well. This is an attempt to fool those who are moving into upper mid-Advanced levels. Remember I told you how the polarities will warp and mutate Balance to deceive. With the merkaba techniques, they get you to install your own blocks, which is far more sophisticated than the physical implants/controls forced on you. As I've also said before, the only astral enhancement that Monroe has in his Institute is a simple eggshell of energy. I say use gold light for that protection. If you place a complex series of patterns within this eggshell, it would be similar to stringing electrical wires around your home. My advice is to steer clear of this. Of course there are those incarnations (obviously) who have chosen to have the merkaba experience. I have given you the information that I've discovered about this topic. The decision is yours to accept or to decline the advice.

### **Aliens & the Third Density**

Some researchers would have everyone believe "there are no aliens on 3rd density". Monroe himself said he 'never found any' on 3rd density, but hoards of them on 4th (astral). THIS IS NOT TRUE. There are plenty of aliens in 3rd density and a good deal of them are interested in our planet!

Consider this: Above 3rd density, there are no needs for materials, electronics, space ships, etc. Yet, the aliens who come to Earth have and must use all of these. They have physical ships, various advanced technologies and the need to eat. Once *you* are on 4th density and above, there is NO need for *any* of this.

The *desire to control Earther resources and population* are all 3rd density matters. There is no need for Earth resources on higher densities as *beings use their will to create whatever is needed*.

Since we have all these flying saucers and other alien craft, the occupants have a 3rd density origin, whether it be from our universe or a parallel one. Some of them do some lofty speaking to enhance their position and dazzle the contactees with their science. THEY ALL HAVE AN AGENDA. The Andromedans have said a lot through Alex Collier, but we have seen nothing. Last year they said there would be intervention on Earth AFTER a nuke was



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

exploded. My comment is, if they are so 'good', why do they have to wait until a nuke is used? They have THEIR agenda. All this skulking about by both 'good' and 'bad' aliens tells us that none of them has the best interest of Earth in mind but rather they seek to use their own control methods and designs.

If they were genuinely 'good', they would make themselves publicly known and reveal what is going on. They say they 'cannot interfere on Earth' BUT they do so every day in different ways. Instead of giving the Earthers the opportunity to make choices on their behalf, the 'good' ones continue to allow the 'bad' ones to exert their control on the planet. Change and progress come through radical experiences. If the 'good' ones showed themselves to the planet and exposed to all what is going on, power to decide would be given to the general population. Yet, they won't do that. Why? Remember too, both 'good' and 'bad' are relative terms. What's 'good' for one is 'bad' for the other. Polarity games continue with these alien participants. Keep in mind too that Earth is the ONLY location in the galaxy with simultaneous incarnations. ALL Higher Selves know this. What better place to play about when you are not participating in the simultaneous path!

Aliens come up with holier-than-thou reasons for not going public on Earth, but you should be suspicious of them as well. It seems to be all about *power and control* by *both sides*. There is also a hefty dose of *fear* on *both sides* as well. The 'good' ones fear this and that, such as the bogus 'non-interference' policy. For having such a policy, they aliens surely do come and go and deal with different power/control groups on this planet. No, the only ones who aren't involved ARE the ones who should be - the people of Earth. Take a closer look at those on the sequential incarnational path (non-Earthers). See if you can glean *why* they are acting as they do with Earthers.

I've talked a lot about *taking back your power and control over self*. Meanwhile, both alien polarity groups are ensuring that you don't have all your power when they are involved. They seek to keep your power and lord it over Earthers with their technology and skulking about. Remember in the series, *Earth Final Conflict* when the Talons killed the psychic woman because they feared she could see them as they really are? There is more to that. The key to advancement here is NOT technological, but *rather spiritual advancement*. The aliens offer *religious control* through their prophets. This is the *opposite* of spiritual. They have a fear of those spiritually advancing.

Don't you wonder why they only seem to appear to the uneducated (Meier in Switzerland) or those who are wrapped in fear (Collier in Colorado)? These people can be controlled and used to further the alien agendas. They treat ALL Earthers like children, yet avoid those who are quite advanced spiritually. Why? Will the advanced ones ask the 'wrong' questions of them? Will these advanced ones be uncontrollable and not sufficiently dazzled by the technology? Will they be able to ask spiritually advanced questions that will reveal where these aliens stand? What do the aliens FEAR?

Quite a bit has been released about Meier's Pleiadians and their home world lives on Erra. When asked about dancing, they replied that their females enjoy this, but the males don't dance because they have concerns over being thought of as gay! Yet these same Errans would have everyone believe how spiritually advanced they are and how Earthers are SO far beneath them. Agenda, agenda, but Meier the uneducated made a good slate for them to write on. These Errans avoid other Earthers like thieves hiding in shadows. They prefer to set up a prophet, as in old, mythological Earther days, and therefore a priesthood. See where this is going? Will they never give up trying to act like gods?



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

So when you hear someone praising this or that alien group, examine the material with a critical eye. What is that alien group's agenda? Why don't they show themselves to anyone who wishes to converse with them? Why don't they publicly land? What do THEY have to gain from manipulating Earthers? What promises do they make that they don't fulfill? Taking back your power also means *not* to give it away to aliens of any polarity. Lots to think about here.

**Astral Versions of Interplanetary Craft**  
(Special Gold Edition Segment)

In an earlier Matrix 5 segment, I mention that there is no *need* for space type craft on the astral. When we are on the astral, we are shed of a 3rd density body. We are in spirit form, although still an incarnational extension of our Higher Self. It is the physical body that would generally *require* a space ship to travel between star systems. The UFOish craft seen commonly roaming Earth's skies are physical craft either Earther created or alien system ships. On the astral, you have the ability, based on your Advancement and self-imposed limitations, to create anything you want. Thus the astral is loaded with houses, temples, books, etc. This *also* includes the presence of flying saucers or other interplanetary style craft. It would be easy to create, for example, an Orion Death Star, but that's usually done by *those carrying their polaric wars from the third to the fourth densities*. In most cases, these craft are used, on the astral, to impress, to control or to intimidate others of less-than-Very Advanced levels. If one is impressed by these craft in the physical, they will still be impressed in the astral. Polarity conflicts continue on the 4th density and polarities will create whatever they find works for them.

There are various New Age gurus who are pushing the awe of alien ships from "other densities". These people are usually willing or unknowing agents of the sequential aliens who push the alien propaganda line. This is yet *another* facet of the Game. This goes along with the fables of 'space brothers' and 'the aliens are here to help us'. This beLIEf system also goes to indoctrinate the unaware to serve the 3rd density myth of 'sequential superiority' by taking this lie into the astral and thus binding the incarnation (as long as possible) to cling to the words of these space phonies. It's ALL the Game! If you feel you must *believe* them and *follow* them, then that is what *you* need to do for *that* is where *you* are in your progression. If you've had enough of that horseshit, then it is time for you to move on to where your Higher Self leads you in your quest for truth.

Those of Very Advanced stages *and* trained properly can handle astral craft that threaten with a mental 'snap of the fingers' to scatter the energy of their creation. Needless to say, when you have become that Advanced, the polarities learn to steer clear of you with their 3rd density style tricks. Gold light can do many amazing things to protect you and teach those that need a lesson something they should understand. I will not say more on that at this time. I have never heard of the *ship creations* hanging around the Monroe level 27 of the Library. This is probably because those who dabble in these types astral creations stay away from there as *it is a gathering point for those who won't tolerate their drama*.

One other point on the space vessels: You *will* find craft from other dimensions poking around on 3rd density Earth. Don't confuse dimensions (parallel systems) with densities. The Game is SO complex that it would be staggering for someone not ready for it to try to comprehend. Our Higher Selves fully comprehend the Game and all its facets. This falls back to advice that I have been giving all along: Trust in YOUR Higher Self! Also remember,



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

anyone pushing alien worship/awe is also another rock in the rocky road for you to deal with. [See also Q&A #421 for related material]

**A Different Look At The Game**

We on Earth having simultaneous incarnations. Those Higher Selves, who refused the quick path, are having sequential incarnations. It seems part of the Game is for those in sequential incarnations to try and derail or, at least, place major obstacles in the paths of those choosing Earther incarnations. This would explain *why* Earth seems to be the central point of chaos in *this* sector of the Galaxy. Sequentials, in the guises of various alien races, meddling and causing other interferences to those in simultaneous Earther paths. This, of course, would make them ultimately responsible for the rocks in the rocky road and the source/cause of the experiential hodge-podge of Earth life. With other Higher Selves working against you, it makes the *challenge* that much more *significant* and *valuable*. This may well be the ultimate source of the conflicts centered on Earth.

**A Different Look At The Orion Queen & Aliens**

The Orion queen FEARS death of the body. As such, she's been cloned and preserved by life extending drugs. Without death, you cannot gain the varied experiences the Higher Self needs to progress. Each Higher Self MUST incarnate in 3rd density genders, sexual orientations and gain a WIDE gamut of diverse experiences. The Higher Self, who became the Orion queen, is experiencing a very limited amount of experiences, only one gender and a huge dose of absolute power. The Orion queen is, beyond a doubt, a low level incarnation. Remember, alien incarnations are sequential, so there is NO input from other incarnations into that particular Higher Self as there is in simultaneous, short lived Earther incarnations.

If Ancient Earthers were not tampered with by the aliens, the ideal lives they were leading would have kept *experiences* to a minimum and those Higher Selves would have progressed as slowly as other sequential incarnations. Simultaneous incarnations did not begin until the aliens altered the Earther humans and created chaos on the planet. Like a phoenix rising from the ashes, the phoenix-like Higher Selves who accepted the challenge of Earther incarnational paths are progressing as no others. The alien created chaos turned out to be the best matrix for the Higher Self to rapidly develop! Earthers seem to marvel at the huge incarnational periods aliens seem to go through. They'll tell their contactees of living for hundreds of years, or, as with reptilian royalty it can be tens of thousands of years or more!

You should be able to see how slowly these Higher Selves, not participating in the Earther fast track, will progress. They live on homogenous planets in pretty uniform societies. There are few challenges, it seems, unless they clash with other aliens, like the Orion Empire. So, if things are pretty ho-hum, is it any surprise that they proceed at a snail's pace when compared to Earther incarnations?

Earthers who long for life spans as long as the aliens are body-controlled, for it's the body that fears death, since the Higher Self is immortal. With the shorter lifetimes on Earth, we are able to gain FAR more varieties of experiences. Your Higher Self loves all these inputs from shim's incarnations as there is NO FEAR in those who chose the Earther challenge,



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

*despite the individual incarnational fears of the various stages of growth, the Higher Self WILL overcome.*

Americans(especially) will be filled with the artificial life extensions of science/drugs and the false sense of lengthened lives through plastic surgery. Incarnational levels short of very Advanced will dabble with these to varying degrees. Once, in the very Advanced stage, the spirit has progressed beyond the need for attempts at extended physical life and shim realizes the time/manner of death was chosen by their Higher Self's need of experiences and variety, there is a new flow of energy from the Higher Self into Dominant, Very Advanced and (primarily) Final Incarnations. Mature spirits/Higher Selves understand the folly of being body-centric and do get a kick out of observing those who are so wrapped up.

Alex Collier told of that one OLD Andromedan who died after living SO long but would be born again into another Andromedan body, you should be able to see how slow that Higher Self's experiences are moving. Same race, same system, similar experiences even if shim should choose a female body for shim's next 3rd density move. This being will still have all the memories of shim's past incarnation - SLOW progress.

Meanwhile on Earth, you are experiencing ALL races on the planet, both genders, all sexual orientations, both polarities and a HUGE range of emotions not found elsewhere. ALL this is being processed by your Higher Self. See what joy that Higher Self is receiving because there was NO FEAR of taking up the memory-denying challenge of the Game on Earth?

The unparalleled emotional range of Earthers is so fascinating to other races that some are trying to duplicate the emotions WITH TECHNOLOGY in order to forego the Earther commitment. I was told this by an alien group loitering around the Monroe Institute when I was there. This will NOT work and is doomed to failure. When I told them they must incarnate here to gain *these* experiences, they rejected the idea outright. Take heart! Examine all facets of your life and spirit. Look within, not without, for it is within that you will find your peace!

**Drugs & The Game**  
(Special Gold Edition Segment)

Americans LOVE their prescription, over-the-counter and 'illegal' drugs. America is a nation of drug addiction. The constant blare on television for prescription drug use (complete with the whispered, rapidly spoken side effects of their usage) has Americans in line at their AMA doctors to get the latest drug fad. Take your pill to sleep, to rid yourself of stomach acids, to lower cholesterol, to do this and to do that.

The people I work with each take more than one prescribed medication every day. The women are most notorious for this and one has her bottles lined up on her desk like they were trophies of distinction. This is also semi-skillfully used with guilt by her to control how she believes others (with fewer drugs) should treat her. The men in my office are also on their medications. One hunky, mid-40's guy tells me how he's on cholesterol and blood pressure pills. They are obviously taking a toll on him. Meanwhile, the most I ever do is herbals or homeopathic, but no alopatics more severe than plain aspirin.

This doesn't even get into the 'illegal' drug usage. These heavy drugs are easily obtained in most of the US. The government is the main drug pusher to finance many of their secret



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

projects, but that is a story better covered elsewhere and is not 'news'. It's the vast usage of all these and legal drugs that I want to draw your attention to.

Now to the question of *why* the Earth is a planet of drugs with the US as the headquarters. Drugs, all prescription/over-the-counter/'illegal', have a *root purpose* of trying to cut your spirit/Higher Self off from the body. Drug useages add *chemical blocks that your Higher Self has to overcome* in that incarnation. Drug useage dulls your psychic receptors and weakens your will to counter the alien DNA commands. This is even found in brushing your teeth with fluoride toothpaste. Bend to the alien powers. The haze of drug useage is a major attempt by the sequential incarnates to delay *your* Advancement and *extend the length of the Game* on 3rd density Earth. *It won't work but it doesn't keep them from trying!*

Our Higher Selves are well *aware* of these attempts by the sequentially incarnating Higher Selves in the Game. They know *this* is an EndGame *feature*. Simultaneously incarnating Higher Selves have planned for this event, just as, when you are playing a board game, *you know what lies ahead* for your piece. Nevertheless, the sequentials will continue to try and stop our progress and our escape from the Game.

Drug useage IS an experience, however, and there are many incarnations that want to have these experiences. These incarnations are not in the Very Advanced stages when they do this, although they may overcome them and move into Very Advanced during the same incarnation. This is done so that you have a *current reference* to the problem in *that* incarnation. You overcome the *sequentially inspired problem* and that makes them huff and puff.

Knowing that the drugs you see advertised in all the media are *sequential dead ends* will assist you in defeating these road blocks or rocks on the rocky path. Knowing that there are aliens taking much pleasure out of seeing the United States of Druggies should assist you in overcoming the *body ID that demands the drugs*. The television ads with happy people dancing to take their drugs. Free flu shots to everyone in my area and so on. The body is working *against* the spirit, not *with* the spirit. *The body, as we have it since the Ancient Earthers, is a sequential alien creation*. Guess who that creation is designed to serve?! Spiritual Advancement and eventual ruling of 85% or so of the body is a major victory in the Game. The odds are against you. The odds had not taken in the full abilities of the Higher Selves on the simultaneous path.

*The body* fears death. The drug companies play to this fear. *The body* panics and drags the weaker spirit to the drug store to get these 'preserving' drugs. This is like the Orion reptilians who have drugs to extend their lives. 'Be like us' is the lure of the sequentials and their heavy body orientation. Drugs will help you feel good, extend your life...trust us. Don't believe it. This segment gives you a vastly different perspective on drugs and should assist you in making decisions for yourself (being spirit) over your body. [Ed.- See also segment *Dominant & Final Incarnations & Experiential Loops* for more on this]



## *MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*

### *Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

#### **Time Travel and 'The Game'**

"Time travel has been a fascination of many. TV shows and films have been made on this topic and are usually quite entertaining. This topic came up yesterday to me from two individuals, so I will give you some information. Time travel is a complex subject as it involves not only moving through time, but also the intricacies of the Game. The Game is a huge jigsaw puzzle. It is a common misconception to believe that if you have a few pieces of the puzzle that you have the entire picture. Time travel involves just a *few* pieces of the puzzle.

In the *Back To The Future* trilogy of movies, Doc Brown creates a device that can physically move people through time and undo events that they are uncomfortable with and thereby create a reality that favors their positions. While very interesting to watch, it just isn't possible to do these things.

Time travel *is* a reality. In Matrix 5, I mention how I learned basic astral travel and, in that course, astral time travel is discussed and assignments are given to travel back to 1600 and forward to 2200. Refer back to other segments for the details as well as which book/teachers I had. Astral time travel is the fastest way to zip around through time periods. You leave your body, use the techniques given (although I altered them to fit what works best for me) and you just *appear where you want to be*. You can observe things going on but cannot change what you see.

Remember, time is an illusion. Earther Higher Selves are simultaneous incarnates and you exist in *all frequencies chosen by your Higher Self for the experiences shim wants*. Our 'present' is another frequency's 'past' or 'future'. Some say that the future isn't here yet, but that isn't quite correct. It's a matter of *perspective*.

The Higher Self is a being of exceptional power and ability. However much of this ability is held in check, by your Higher Self, when your Higher Self agrees to participate in the Game. This refers to *both* simultaneous and sequential incarnating beings. The Game's rules *do not* include *changing the rules by using your abilities*. The restrictions of the Game take precedence in the 3rd density. In certain instances the Higher Self can intervene (as per earlier M5 segments) to ensure that the incarnation's pre-chosen path goals are met and not circumvented by other Game players. Time travel, whereby one or a group decides to 'mold events to fit *their* agendas' is a violation of Game rules. Such an action would *interfere with experiential choices* and is motivated by the body rather than by the spirit.

In *Back To The Future*, Marty McFly wanted his family's experiences to be different than what they chose. By going into the past, he altered events to make his family's path totally different. You can't do that. This would have interfered with the experiential choices of several Higher Selves to fall under the desires of one. This is a Lightsider power play, the 'I know what's best for you' ploy.

Moving away from fictional films, there's the Montauk series of events and their time travels. The Montauk project was built with *heavy alien activity and instruction*. If you don't recall what I've written on alien, sequential incarnate attempts to hinder simultaneous incarnates as part of the Game, refer back to earlier M5 segments. Beware of aliens bearing gifts! They most likely have an a hidden agenda. That certain aliens *wanted* the Dark government of the US to have *this* technology should say something in and of itself. It wasn't made available to everyone or even the knowledge of it made public. Nope,



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

the aliens, *as usual*, go slinking/slithering around in the Dark to attempt to manipulate/obstruct the developments of Earther Higher Self incarnates with the assistance of Darksiders on Earth.

The Montauk project is wrapped in tragedies, murders and more. That alone tags it as a Dark event. Mind controls, interdimensional tamperings and others have invited trouble to Earth. The 20 year loop event caused by the Montauk experiment - the rift - is real and a bi-product of the experiment. Have you heard of the aliens who were responsible for this technology returning to repair the damage their interference caused? Of course not. Therefore one has to question their intent. The rift would not exist if the damage was repaired. On the other hand, *the rift couldn't exist if it was not part of the Game*. Again, beware of aliens bearing gifts.

There is an excellent source of Montauk materials in books by Preston Nichols and Peter Moon available through Sky Books on Long Island, NY. Start with *The Montauk Project - Experiments in Time* if you're interested in this topic. I've read the whole series and find it quite interesting. A huge amount of deception and paranoia is depicted by the controllers of the technology. Paranoia and deception are common among Dark workers who fear losing their control. That should indicate how tenuous their hold is.

One thing to remember in reading time travel stories is that you cannot go back in time to kill anyone to change history. If this were possible, history would constantly be changing for all the time travelers wandering around being like Marty McFly. For everyone who wants future CC, there's another who doesn't want that but rather future MM and then someone else who wants future WW and on it goes. Time travel can be excellent for OBSERVING first hand how something was.

The body oriented would say, 'why don't you see what next week's lottery numbers are so you could be rich?'. Geez, I've been asked that question enough. *Your Higher Self is in control of at what stage you are able to start conscious astral travel. If you can't do it yet, take it up with your Higher Self. If you can, your Higher Self requires that talent for that incarnation.* Astral travel requires a certain stage of spiritual maturity. Astral time travel requires even more.

August 12, 2003 is the next 20 year date for the time loop created by the disastrous Montauk project. The loop event was created on Aug 12, 1943 when things just seemed to go wrong. Again I point out the alien connection and set-up for this to happen. You also didn't see any so-called 'good aliens' with their advanced technologies step in to 'undo the damage'. Once more, beware of aliens bearing gifts. This energy rift seems to peak every 20 years from the 43 date. As it is, I've written that 2003 looks like it'll be the year from hell. Add this event to the pot! There is one thing I would like you all to remember though - *this IS part of the Game*. Something of this magnitude would not be allowed IN the Game if it were not part OF it. You need more pieces of the puzzle to see it better.

I find it interesting that in the latest claims by the Andromedans they use the date Aug 12, 03 as the deadline they set for 'driving all aliens off Earth'. There's a connection here. I advise you take whatever the Andromedans or their lackeys say with no more than just a grain of salt. Remember the 'mass fly over of Andromedan ships' that was going to happen a couple of summers ago? It seems that ALL aliens just get their jollies from seeing what Earthers will believe next. They ALL have their agendas.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

One of the major byproducts of the Montauk project is the generation of *fear* which is why the Dark side *allows* printing materials of it. They *want* you to generate fear, feel threatened and give your power away to Dark authorities for external 'protection'. There is nothing to be 'in fear' about when you KNOW and TRUST in your Higher Self. That is the KEY for each Earther Higher Self. With the gold shield and trust in your Higher Self, you know you're immortal and it's the body that tries to get you to fear. Who created the bodies we have? Those damned, fucking aliens! It can seem that the aliens have their claws, paws and hands all over in the Game. Yes, these are other pieces of the puzzle. *They fear you* discovering *who you really are*. The Montauk project is just another of their tools for that. The puzzle, however, will not be completed for you until *your* Final Incarnation merges all of *your* Higher Self's incarnations into one.

Time travel is fun and exciting to watch on TV or in the theater. Time travel can be quite interesting in the astral. Just remember *with each phase of your awakening that you will be met head-on with external blocks and fears to keep you from progressing*. This is the Rocky Road as per that segment in M5. The *fears* are part of the rocks for you to overcome. This is all I have to say on the time travel topic for now. Read this segment carefully and consult with your Higher Self." {Ref: Q&A# 390}

**Observation: The Game, America & 'God'**

I watched a rabid, *reactionary wave* clinging to non-Very Advanced and minion Americans after a federal appeals court correctly ordered the removal of "under god" from the Pledge of Allegiance. *This is an excellent example of 2 Higher Self incarnates (judges) trying to dismantle a piece of the Game without the Game's agreement*. The result is the *minions* and the *low and mid level incarnates* panic seen on tv and in print today. 'We need our external deity', they scream. 'We aren't responsible enough to live life without an external deity', and they fall on their knees. 'We want to give away our power and if we can't have our god thrust on the lives of *everyone* irregardless of what *they* feel, *we* want a new, violent revolution'. Ah, yeah, horse shit everywhere.

The judges *didn't* say that these people could not use the power giveaway phrase, 'under god' in *private*. The two judges said it was a violation of separation of church and state. Wails and moans of the religiously rabid aside, when you observe a situation like this, always look deeper. The Orion Empire is returning. Self-proclaimed Earth Emperor George the traitor (but is he a real traitor if he's a reptilian? Hmmm) says how important "the almighty" is to him. The "almighty"? Yes, the Orion queen is referred to as 'the almighty' as one of her numerous titles. I've already said several times that the 'god' of the Earther religions is the Orion queen. The US ditty of 'one nation under god' does not have the surface interpretation adhered to by the masses of followers, it's the Orion queen to those in power who know. Since one of the Game's Wild Cards is the *overt control of Earth by the Orion Empire*, the US is most definitely under 'god' also known as the Orion Queen. Removing her from the pledge, money, etc at this date is *not* allowed and the fools who follow play right into her hands, rather claws. Just think, if this Game Wild Card is permitted full play, these nuts can have their 'god' on the faces of all planetary monies.

Some may ask about removing prayer from schools and some other events of past decades. Did they remove it from Congressional sessions? NO! Did they remove it from oaths taken by leaders and judges? NO! They also didn't remove it from several other areas. The reason prayer was removed in schools was *to create division* and enhance the 'divided they fall'



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

phrase that the Orion Empire is employing, on Earth as it has elsewhere, to make their absorption of the planet all that much easier.

*These* are the things that Very Advanced and higher incarnates should look at, *not* just the surface and the 3-ring clown acts in Washington and by the damned one-godder fanatics. The Game will not allow dismantling of the slightest piece of it UNLESS it serves the Game by introducing a more advantageous (to the Game) piece. Yes, *it's all experience indeed.*

Keep your eyes/ears open.

**Patriotism and The Game**

Ever since 9/11, the Game has been successful in getting draconian measures passed in the US because they wrap these measures in a flag. One of the holy words of the current phase is 'terrorism'. This is one of fear's catch phrase terms. Most people are anxious to give away their power for the illusion of safety. The people they want you to fear and point their fingers 'at for 9/11 are NOT those who were responsible. *If you want to see who is responsible for 9/11, look at the finger pointers.*

People are dancing to the tunes that the fear mongers in America are playing. Those who do so are being controlled by their bodies. It's the body that fears death, never the spirit. The Game has moved into a higher gear since last September. They want you to believe there are 'terrorists' everywhere to keep people in a fear state and, thus, feed the lower astrals who enjoy the negative vibrations. They want you to give away your power so they can make you obey them. If you don't give away your power, then you don't invite the vampire into your home. If you DO give away your power, the vampire is invited in and you only have yourself to blame.

'Patriotism' is another catch-phrase term they use to control the people. This, as are all Game terminologies, is warped as well. It's another way to *force conforming*. Conforming is 'necessary for the Game to succeed' with its goals. *Both* Dark and Light polarities are involved in *this* phase of the Game - which should tell the observer something.

Here's an excellent quote from Theodore Roosevelt on Patriotism that is currently appearing on DavidIcke.com:

ARE YOU LISTENING GEORGIE?

"Patriotism means to stand by the country. It does not mean to stand by the president or any other public official, save exactly to the degree in which he himself stands by the country. It is patriotic to support him insofar as he efficiently serves the country. It is unpatriotic not to oppose him to the exact extent that by inefficiently or otherwise he fails I his duty to stand by the country. In either event, it is unpatriotic not to tell the truth, whether about the president or anyone else."  
Theodore Roosevelt

This is excellent, and should be remembered by the Observer. *What is going on in the US today also happened in Russia during the 20's, Germany in the 30's and Eastern Europe/China in the 50's.* Emperor Bush, while goose stepping in DC, wants 1 in 24 Americans to spy on their fellow citizens. This was a feature of fascist, communist and any other totalitarian governments. THIS IS THE GAME running a successful *experiential loop*



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

that people keep playing. You can remove yourself from these planetary wide experiential loops - a goal you must achieve to move higher. The papers say Bush's approval rating is 72%. This is not true but how they are manipulating, as always.

So, what does one do? Low and Mid level incarnates will dance to the Game's tune as these are the experiences their Higher Selves want. Low Advanced through Mid Advanced levels will give lip service to the dance but have reservations about it. They may share these reservations with close friends, but will wave their flags in public or challenge the Game *directly* (David Icke for example). Very Advanced and higher won't be found waving flags for the Game's benefit. *Observation* is key here. Watch and analyze. Take many mental notes, but resist getting caught up in the Game's fervor. Leave that to those at the levels where this participation is *necessary* to learn. You will do what *your* Higher Self requires of shim's incarnation as you. There is no good/bad here. It's all experience. This is *their* experience and they must be free to pursue it. They release excellent information on the Game, but from an *attack* point of view rather than the *observational* point of view. They also are Lightsiders trying to 'save' everyone from the Dark. This is ok. It's their path.

Keep the Laws of the Universe in mind when faced with the fast track the Game has started. With the stock market also crashing (intended despite what Greenspan says in public), more fear is generated. *Fear* is the name of the current Game *chapter*. The *alien* Wild Card is moving into play *behind* the scenes. Which Wild Card is about to be thrown into the action? My advice to those in Very Advanced stages is to *beware of being swept up in the drama* and *observe*, but above *all* else, do what YOU feel you *must* do.

**Observations: The Game is NOT the film "Matrix"**

I rejected the submission of a link to a page that glorifies the film 'The Matrix' *as if it is* The Game discussed in Matrix 5. This site takes many of the film's ideas and compounds them. I went there, and it's full of movie based theories and human superior bullshit. It's an interesting film and there are *some* similarities to The Game, but giving the film THAT much energy will lead to dead ends and other similar manipulations.

The reason that people are pulled to the film is that there is a *subconscious nudge* that Earther existence is *not what it seems to be* and *controls* are involved. Most of what is in The Matrix is pure Hollywood, which is controlled by the Dark polarity. The polarities love using material that contains only enough truth to catch the unsuspecting. They candy coat (truth) their dead-end lies so that the lies will overwhelm the truth.

I NEVER use the term 'matrix' as that has a connection to the film. 'The Game' is far more accurate as it IS looked on as a Game by those Higher Selves involved in it, both Earther experience and alien (non-Earther born) experience. The film is way too Dark and sinister which does serve the polarities. Matrix 5 explains the Game for what it is - experience and a learning ground for higher experiences. The film is heavily Dark & Light polarity with Neo being the man who will 'save' (external deity) the people, not just help them realize who they are (thus 'saving' themselves), but who actually does physical battle against the Dark. That is NOT the way to win the Game, but rather *the way to continue in it!*

Of course it's YOUR choice with what *you* want to do with *your* incarnation. Choose whatever path YOU want. Your Higher Self will be YOUR guide.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**Facet of the Game: Immune System Attacks**

One of the women I work with, a charter member of prescription-of-the-month club, called her quack because she has swollen glands on one side of her jaw. The nurse told her they are too busy with hordes of sick & dying to see her, but the doctor would call in a prescription WITHOUT EVEN SEEING HER TO DIAGNOSE.

When this woman went to the pharmacy, the pill pusher told her that they are SO backlogged with drugs to dispense that it would be over an hour before they could get to hers. She started whining (female hallmark) and she got her drugs sooner.

There are high numbers of sick/dying around here and I'm sure elsewhere as well. Coughing, hacking, fevers, flu, etc. Excessive self-prescribing/over the counter drugs as well as prescriptions galore. They constantly attack their immune systems with chemicals then wonder why it doesn't function properly. Homeopathy is the only way since it works with your immune system rather than against the system as allopaths do. Homeopathy also goes to the root/cause of the disease and not to the symptoms which are just fruits of the cause.

Of course this *immune attacking via drugs* is part of The Game and the destruction of the immune system is part of it. If your Higher Self is participating in this through shim's incarnation, it's all for experiences. If you aren't meant to have these horrible experiences, you'd be dealing with a homeopath. This is just one facet of The Game's current time line.

One's Higher Self can desire the *experiences* of certain diseases. As I've said in M5, if you are supposed to experience an event related to illness or death, no doctor, healer, homeopath or shaman will be able to cure you of it.

**Observations: Why "Star Trek" Scenario Will Not Happen Here on Earth**

It was 10 years ago that Bob Monroe told my group at his Institute that he loves watching Star Trek. He also said *it will never happen*. At the time I didn't understand why not, although I had a sneaking suspicion that what he said was true. Since having all the experiences you've read in Matrix 5 and what I've shared here, I now know why Monroe was absolutely correct.

In the Second Edition, I explained why Earth has been quarantined by the aliens and how this is due to their desire to keep Earther Higher Selves from 'infecting' non-Earth systems. They don't fear germs or such, they fear the Advancing Higher Selves may interest their systems in the rapid development path. It's NOT that we are so 'primitive' by their standards in technology. It's that we are advancing farther/faster than they are in *spiritual* development.

Even in the new *Enterprise* series, Earthers want to change the status quo of aliens with the 'be like us' and 'we know what's best' attitudes. These are common in those in the mid through mid-Advanced spiritual levels. These incarnations have advanced only enough, at this time, to let their physical and/or their limited spiritual states dictate.

Once you get into the Very Advanced stages and, of course, your Awakened Final Incarnation, you move *beyond the need to impose your will* on alien cultures or individuals. The First Law of the Universe - Allowance - begins to dominate your maturing



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

thoughts. Perfect examples of the spiritually *unenlightened* are being observed with the current situation on Earth. Different groups (again) at war *to impose their beliefs/restrictions on others* with no regard to the Universal Laws. Yes, these are learning experiences for the developing spirits, AND if this was the limit of it, Earth would not be quarantined since the Sirian/Orion Empires are just 2 examples of alien groups that also impose on others.

The alien fear is those Earthers who have moved BEYOND this level and operate on other levels as well. These have some astounding *abilities* and *perspectives* that THEY fear and don't want their populations to be exposed to. Knowing this, do you think that some alien group will bring 'rescue' ships to remove the population, as some would have you to believe? Hell, no! Maybe *cattle car ships* for them to *dine* on, yes, but not to 'rescue'. Be VERY suspicious if this Wild Card gets played. Remember Twilight Zone's 'To Serve Man' episode from the 50's.

The aliens would NEVER allow Starship Enterprises full of Earthers to zip around the galaxy. *Earthers must be contained.*

On the other hand, the 2012 date looms ever closer. Even without a quarantine, this date warns that *Star Trek treks are limited to imagination and film*. There is ONE exception, and that is people who can *astral travel*. They can go *anywhere* and *anytime*. Yes, it is MOST interesting. Few can do this, but more can do this today than 100 years ago. This ALSO puts fear in alien leaders since they cannot stop this.

These same beings (including the secret government) have developed astral alarms & traps to catch those who try to probe their facilities. I wrote about this in M5 as well, so please refer to what's in the text. These astral alarms are primarily located on Earth, so if you can astral travel, but VERY careful where you poke around. They can follow you back to your body via the 'silver cord' or connection to your Higher Self. Then, too, if your Higher Self allows this to happen, it's an experience with a questionable ending, I'd think.

You can briefly visit Mintaka, which looks a lot like Coruscant (Emperor's planet in Star Wars) or Erra in Taygeta in one of the Pleiadian systems (very green) or even one other world which is rocky and the local have homes build in the sides of cliffs with the outer wall looking like glass. These are friendly. THIS type of travel, *which will eventually be available to ALL*, is one the aliens cannot stop. They try with fluorides, vaccines, nutra-sweet, pollutants, electronic zaps and more (see Matrix 3 Volume 2 on this stuff), but yet *the Higher Self will counter these effects in those incarnations shim wants to experience astral events or other special situations*. So, enjoy Star Trek, Star Wars, Babylon 5, etc. You WILL be able to glean some hidden information in them, depending on your level of advancement in the current incarnation reading this. But never forget it's THEM (aliens) who have fears about US (Higher Self Earthers). This should give you things to think about.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**The Ultimate Goal of the Game on Earth**  
(Special Gold Edition Segment)

Have you wondered what the Ultimate Goal of the Game is on 3rd density Earth? Look at *some* of the events since the mid-1800's and where they have been moving Earth since the mid-1800's until today. The United States is the central thrust of the Game due to the nature of it and the power that it commands.

\*Lincoln shreds the Constitution and the concept of independence for the American states in favor of a single nation (damn the constitution) at the command of a central government.

\*Females raise the stakes on their control over males with prohibition as their first crusade in the US. This is followed by voting rights with the sham front of "equality". The Orion sleeper DNA has been activated.

\*After several wars, old empires crumble, especially in Europe. The attitude of the Game is 'you have to break a few eggs to make a cake'. World War I and World War II are the most significant, especially with the formation of the United Nations.

\*In the late 1980's and early 90's, the communist block crumbles from within and by the leaders, NOT the people, in most cases, especially Russia. This is *very* significant. The Game moves into a higher gear. The European Union develops and grows into a United States of Europe. It has expansion plans today. Single European currency becomes a reality.

\*Immigrants flow into Europe and the US. These are immigrants who mostly serve to further dilute the native populations. Homogeny is encouraged.

\**One world thought* heavily promoted, *one world people* and the people are forced to conform to *new sets of 'rules'*. *Unified* measuring systems, *unified* currencies and *no borders* are all key phrases. The *new majority* (women and non-Europeans) discriminate against European descended males. Men willingly give up control *in most cases* due to their Orion DNA commands. Women (Orion mode) are at the front.

\*Problem, reaction, solution becomes almost a daily event with fear, death and fear of death (for the body ID'd) introducing police state trappings: video cameras everywhere, police monitoring, you can't say 'this' or 'that'...fear, fear, fear.

The Mid Advanced and higher incarnates will have no trouble in adding to these observations. What you need to be aware of is that *all* of this IS the Game *in action*. Not only that, but *these events are being coordinated by sequential aliens*. It was the sequential aliens who introduced advanced technologies on Earth to people who were not spiritually mature enough to handle them.

It is the sequential alien incarnates who are looking to tip the Game in their favor. And their 'bottom line'? *The whole thrust of ALL this meddling, 'One World' stuff is to convert Earth into a sequential incarnate type world where there are minimal differences and a lack of true experiences that simultaneously incarnating Higher Selves live for*. The sequential incarnates seek to deny the simultaneous incarnates a place for rapid development and, hence drive them from the Game by denying us what we thrive on. THAT is the Ultimate Goal!



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

While this is their goal, they will find *they are fighting an impossible battle to win*. Keep the year 2012 in mind as the final year in EndGame. I expect most of us, if not all of us, will have departed *before* then. The sequential incarnates are way too late to reverse or halt progression. In this time period, simultaneous incarnates are ALL over Earth's history and time. It is OUR EndGame and time for us to move on. They can't deny us *what we already have*, but they do seek to take Earth as one of their own and deny any other fast paced block of incarnates.

Another thing the simultaneous incarnations are *not* paying attention to is the Earth planetary spirit. The planetary spirit is *also* preparing to Advance to shim's next level. *The greed of the sequentials will prove very fruitless*. If you can astral time travel to the year 2200, you will be able to see what I mean. What you will see in 2200 is the result of something that will happen in these days of EndGame.

One thing that I've discovered about *all* the sequential incarnates' worlds is that they are SO alike on their own planet. It would be terribly BORING for a simultaneous to find much of interest on these world besides knowing who they are. These worlds are homogenous, have a one-world government (even in the Empires of Orion and Sirius). It is the sequential incarnates who demand little, if any, *change* and little, if any, *independent thought*. It's the 'good of the planet' at the cost of the 'independence of the individual' which is their mantra.

John Kennedy's inauguration catch-phrase in 1961 was a key to this intent AND was of sequential thought. "Ask not what your country can do for you. Ask what you can do for your country" THIS IS A SEQUENTIAL, ONE WORLD PROGRAM MANTRA. Lightsiders embrace it since the *nature* of Lightsiders is to *give all*. Darksiders embrace it as the *nature* of Darksiders is to *take all....*the yin-yang of balance (not to be confused with true Balance). The country is here to serve the people *if* the simultaneous incarnates are in charge. When it becomes the other way around, you have a sequential incarnate world with a heavy minion population. This is Earth today.

Consider all of this when you make your observations. Remember the Bottom Line!







---

---

## *Human Incarnations of Nature Spirit*

---

---

### **Minion Incarnations**

Contrary to popular belief, there is *not* “a line of spirits originating from Higher Selves waiting to be incarnated”. It is *not* that Earth is not capable of sustaining a huge population. It's *what* is incarnating in this excessive amount of human *bodies*.

The Higher Self has specific goals/experiences desired on 3rd density Earth. There are many Higher Selves, each with many hundreds of incarnations in all time periods. The ideal amount of incarnations was in Ancient Earth where there were several hundred thousand incarnations at one time. Today there are billions. When Earth humans create physical bodies, they must be *animated*. When all spirits coming from Higher Selves are incarnated, *but bodies are still being produced*, the animating spirit *must* come from the *animal group souls*.

Creation *demands* that this be so and this is what the Orion/Sirian Empire is *counting* on. Humans animated by *group soul energy* are of the lowest order, very animalistic in human form. To those who are very perceptive, they are noticed by the flat, depthless eyes (windows to the soul), for example. These incarnations, being animal in nature, will follow those who *take care of them* (government or religion) and always look for others to *take care of them*. These incarnations are easily roused and stimulated. These easily participate in mob actions, violence and rapes. They move with the winds, but will *resist change* to their minimal *comforts*.

In Robert Monroe's books (1st and 2nd), he meets disincarnate animal/human spirits, for example, in the 'ball of carnal desires'. Robert pulled one from the naked ball and he described the blank expression and the desire the spirit had to get back into the sex ball. Read his books for details. This is one place *recently dead minion* (animal-into-human-body) *spirits* go... the lower astral. It is the 'glow' of the *human experience* that *still* holds them. In time, it will fade and the spirit will wink out and *return to the animal group soul*. This spirit CANNOT make the transition to Higher Self spirit form as it is *contrary to its nature and purpose*. It should be left alone to develop according to its *own* desires.

That *religion* (which wants people to breed like roaches) wants more *children* (the visible force behind the anti-abortion movement) shows it wants the population to continue to grow. Why? *The number of incarnations of minion spirits already exceeds incarnations of Higher Selves*. Remember, the Empire wants *breeding, production and food*, NOT advancing spiritual growth.

Higher Selves, *knowing the body is a vehicle for experience*, nothing more and nothing sacred, understands the Dark plot. The 'body is sacred and life is sacred' mantras originate from the Empire *where it IS sacred to them*.

Minion spirits are strictly to *animate the excessive bodies*. Minion spirits are more closely related to nature spirits than to Higher Self incarnations. They have a *different function* in *their own evolution*. Dark didn't hesitate to mutate the Earth human into genders, why



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

should they care if they mutate *animal spirits into these bodies* as long as it serves *their* purposes?

The Empire understands this and is using the anti-abortion/religious groups to further its goals and try to counter the Higher Selves. We have been told that if the majority of Earthers requests benefic alien assistance, they will come. Well, *if* the majority of Earthers are of *minion* spirit incarnations, *that majority can never be reached*. The Dark is playing/mutating the Game *to fit those rules*. This will be found to be of little consequence, however, for change and evolutionary progress will happen *despite* the Empire and the Dark.

It is not the purpose of Advanced, Dominant and Final Incarnations to overly concern themselves with Minion Incarnations. This is being revealed to add more to your *understanding* and assist you, especially if you are a Final Incarnation.

### **The Matrix and Minions**

One statement made in the film *Matrix* is to remember that *those still asleep will do anything to preserve the system and defend it*, therefore consider them enemy pawns. The same applies to real life. Unless a person is awake, they will defend the system and must be considered enemies. This means *use extreme caution in how much you tell a sleeper and steer clear of the minions who cannot awaken due to the nature of their animating spirit*. It's interesting, as I told Val, that the minions also have their own song on the radio now. The chorus goes, "We ain't nothing but mammals, so let's do it like they do it on the Discovery channel". Minions will defend whoever makes them comfortable, feeds and houses them. The *welfare system* is in place, among other things, *to make sure the minions know who is feeding and 'caring' for them*.

The preservation of the system, where only the *rulers* decide any *alterations of the direction of the planet*, is paramount to the establishment. This is where *The Handbook* comes into valuable guidance for those very few awake and those trying to awaken and break free. Due to this, it is imperative that those who want to be awake regain all their power, because if the Handbook changes are thwarted, at least you will have the ability to spiral beyond this tragedy.

Light and Dark (in Light clothing) have really stepped up the assault against private gun ownership. This is because Dark knows what is about to happen and wants to up its control. Even if everyone around you wishes to remain asleep, look to yourself. If you don't take care of self first, you won't be able to assist others properly.

### **More on Minion Incarnations**

There is a *finite* amount of Higher Selves who choose to incarnate on Earth/3rd Density. One is never forced to begin a series of incarnations here, however one can accept the challenge. Many never will choose this route. The Earth spirit desires those in harmony with its own nature which is why the *pre-gendered Earth humans had a paradise where telepathy with animals and true peace was the way of things*. [Ed. – See also Q&A #13]

Earth is *reacting* to the uncomfortable and mutated population on the planet by trying to get rid of those who don't belong. Famines and natural disasters are two ways. Genderized humans are bad enough, but the incarnating of *animalistic group soul* into *human form* is



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

an even worse abomination. Yes, there is governmental manipulation of weather, but there are the far more powerful *Earth-generated events*. The Earth spirit is a Balance entity. It has been feeling the imbalance for quite a while now and is reacting accordingly.

*Time* magazine (11/25/02), in their People section, show women from the PETA organization storming the stage of a Victoria's Secret fashion show and carrying posters calling the model "scum" because she's working for a fur company. In an earlier Matrix 5 segment, I mentioned the radical PETA organization as being minion and Lightsider composed.

Another minion incarnational fondness comes in the seemingly endless attempts at *comparing Earther human activity to the animal world*. It's been on the news and in print how human sexuality, for example, is constantly compared to animal realm sexuality. This is an invalid comparison. *The Nature path is vastly different from the Higher Self path*. How many times have you heard comparisons of human gay orientation and talk about how animals aren't gay. Of course, this, for one, is not true. Most animals are bisexual. However animals are *not on the same experiential path* as we are. Comparisons of both paths should be ignored as invalid, but will give you a clue as to where the person/people who push these things *are* coming from.

This is more of sequential alien incarnates attempting to derail the simultaneously incarnating. It is the *minion incarnates* who, like the meddling sequentials tampering with us on Earth, are constantly trying to compare human life to animal. Not only that, they will go so far as to say animals are superior to humans. This is one of PETA's mantras. This is *another* dead end to try to block simultaneously incarnating Higher Selves. That *most of PETA's members are female* also tells you something. Since the *majority of Earth's population is female* and the *majority of incarnations are minion* due to alien interference, well, you can connect the dots on that. The PETA Lightsiders, usually Low Advanced levels, are involved for *experiences* that their Higher Selves desire. These people will eventually move beyond this stage, if not during their current incarnation then in another.

**Observation: Minion Moves**

I was watching *Survivor* last night and, after one guy gave a Lightsider speech about not telling lies to women <sigh>, he extended his right arm, palm down in a loose fist. One other guy comes up, extends his right arm the same way, and taps the other guy's extended hand. This is the *same* action that chimps and other jungle/forest apes use. I've seen it before on nature shows.

After this, I watched another show where this guy starts a one handed, chest thumping when he's trying to prove a point about himself to a panel. This is *another* ape communication tactic. You will see this one armed, chest thump particularly among blacks and hispanics.

If you've been particularly observant, you'll notice that these animal antics began some years ago among black race elements and were eagerly copied by hispanic and certain whites. This is minion activity. Remember the nature of a minion spirit in a human body. Unlike the simultaneous Higher Self, the minion spirit is nature based and retains that image even in the human body. I remember one guy wanting me to respond in this type of manner and I replied that I don't participate in those minion activities. He had a shocked look on his face when I said that.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

This reminded me of when my shaman teacher wanted me to go to a 'shaman in a weekend' style course to see how NOT to learn. At one point, the instructor wanted everyone to "act like an animal of their choice". I just couldn't do that. It felt so wrong for me. Yet those there started growling, snarling, etc. Talk about a minion group event! Quickie shamanic courses are very popular with lower Advanced *and* some minions due to their stress on connecting with the animal realm. True shamans do not carry on as Quickie, faux 'shamans' do.

Simultaneous Higher Selves are not on the nature spirit path. When you see people mimicking ape interactions, think minion. Most of Earth is populated by minions, so that's not hard to catch for observations. Minions are group soul beings and when one or more of them start acting in a certain manner, others follow to belong to the herd or pack. I noticed that not all of the men in that *Survivor* tribe did the ape touch. Only a minion spirit won't hesitate to respond to another minion spirit.

There are all kinds of minion moves to see every day either in person or on television. Minion incarnations are just SO perverse, but this is a part of the sequential aliens manipulations to try and halt the progress of the simultaneous incarnates.

### **Minion Incarnations and Embedded Memories**

New York City announces it has 70 million rats in the city. The TV news next shows PETA protesting New York's attempts to kill off as much of the rat population as possible. 'Rats Have Rights' reads the posters as a rat-costumed person tries to be cute.

As stated in the previous section on minion incarnations, they originate from the animal group soul and *not* the Higher Self souls. The breeding of human bodies (like roaches) has forced animal spirit essences into these bodies. What *memories* are embedded on this animating spirit? Animal, of course. This includes omnivores, carnivores and herbivores. Herbivores detest meat eating and hence organizations like PETA exist. This does *not* mean PETA membership is totally herbivore incarnates, but it does mean *primarily*. Various radical Light-siders have also been pulled in. *Animal abuse should not be tolerated*, but this should *not* be taken to the extreme where *animals abuse people* either, example: rats. PETA is just one example of animal groups soul incarnates' organization.

Carnivore incarnates are drawn to the military and the police as careers for 'legal' *brutality* and to criminal organizations for illegal and semi-legal expressions of their *natures*. Both the military and the police have *lowered their admission standards* to draw in these incarnates. The recent news has US military in foreign lands raping in Okinawa as well as other inexcusable activities both in Okinawa and other parts where the military is stationed. Police beatings in places like New York, Los Angeles, Philadelphia and elsewhere are perfect for carnivore incarnations. Why are these types of incarnates encouraged to join the police and the military? Will the military and much of the police turn on the citizenry if ordered? If they are minion incarnates, most definitely. Consider these questions well based on the information given in this section.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**Observation: Mark of the Minion Incarnation**

When I came out of my massage therapist's office, I saw that his SUV had a large paw print, like that of a cougar, on the rear window. The thing about the decal is that it has 5 toes and not 4 as the animal has. I commented to him that they don't have 5 toes, but he didn't seem to care.

Today, when leaving a mall, I noticed another vehicle had the same decal in its rear window - the 5 toed paw print. This is nothing less than one of the marks of a minion - animal in human form, no matter what they might believe it is.

This cutsie animal/human combination antic has been around for a long time, but is more prevailing in these latter decades. Animals acting as humans and humans acting as animals. Minion incarnations! *There are more minions on Earth today than at any other time in history* both pre and post Atlantis.

Look for the 5-toed paw print when you are out and about. I'm sure more of them will turn up. Just something else to observe in the cornucopia of EndGame.

**Stirring Up The Minions**

Once you begin to *seriously* spiral out and want to withdraw from the Game, those around you will fall into action against you. Whether it be family, friends or co-workers, they will use whatever means they can to get you to drop those non-conformist thoughts and *return to sleep*. The forms of attack range from demands to silent treatments to guilt to body loyalties and everything in-between.

The Dark and the Light will use *surrogates* (weak, body controlled people) to irritate and attempt to intimidate you. I've heard of a teen child hitting and giving grief to her mother, who just happens to be spiraling out, co-workers isolating a person who won't be part of the group and does what he does because he happens to be spiraling out, and a married man whose wife makes unreasonable demands because he wants to spiral out. Religion is a common weapon for those you know to use against you.

Your aura *changes* once you *seriously* start to close down your *participation* in the Game. If your spirit is mature/advanced enough, you will resist these coercions. The more you resist, the stronger you will get. You can find yourself quite alone unless you can hook up with another rapidly advancing incarnate. This is good as you can support each other. Let the dogs howl. It's a major test for you. You **MUST** pass these types of tests to show you have the conviction and maturity needed for the higher dimensions. No one said it'd be easy.

**Minions & Aliens & The Game - Oh My!**

A take on a *Wizard of Oz* phrase (Lions & Tigers & Bears, Oh My!): Minions & Aliens & The Game - Oh My! While you can find Earther Higher Selves in just about any location and group on Earth, there are some places where minions and aliens prefer to go. Minions are found in all sporting events but, unless working as janitorial staff, you would never find a minion at a Star Trek or other sci-fi convention. Minions are body oriented. They make excellent blind followers, hence security staff, military and similar. This doesn't mean you



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

won't find lower level Earther Higher Selves there too, but minions thrive on this stuff, while Earther Higher Selves will evolve out of them.

Aliens can be found all over the place from positions of planetary, religious and corporate powers to someone living in the neighborhood. If you've seen the film, *Galaxy Quest*, you saw *how* the aliens are able to shape-shift into human form. While this is a film, *the techniques are genuine*. This is how Cathy O'Brien in *Trance Formation of America* saw George Bush Sr. change from human form to reptilian. While Earthers can find this technology amazing, certain alien groups have had the ability to shape shift for a long time. They use it here either to pass unnoticed or to deceive. Not many Earthers would elect an obvious reptilian to the presidency, after all, and the Americans, as a group, prefer their illusions to reality. Yes, aliens WOULD attend a sci-fi convention to observe what Earthers are doing with these topics, BUT you would not likely know they are aliens unless *you* had certain abilities.

Of course aliens will *always* deny who they are. They are not going to say, "ok, you caught me". They are fulfilling functions on Earth and it is vital to their function that you don't know, just as it is a major function of the American government to keep the citizenry in the dark unless it suits their purpose. If the Orion Wild Card gets fully in play, THEN we'll all see aliens *as they really are* for the need for deception will be ended. The only reasons after that will be to discover people who work against their system. It is not that an incarnation, either simultaneous or sequential, is *on Earth* that makes Earth special. It is the individual's Higher Self *choice* of one growth path *or* the other. This is why I had said in earlier material that the so-called quarantine of Earth is NOT to keep us apart for US being primitive, but to keep the masses of sequential incarnates from being 'contaminated' by the simultaneous incarnates.

The reasons for all of these shenanigans are due to Earther Higher Selves, the simultaneous path and the Game. In this regard, Earth IS at the attention center of the galaxy because *only on Earth can you choose the simultaneous path*. The Game is SO interested in maintaining your interest in the game board, the pieces and the rules that it doesn't want you to look away from them. The Matrix 5 material is taking you beyond the Game as well as giving you much hidden information on the Game. I will also tell you this has certain factions quite frustrated because of the Matrix 5 materials. Their frustrations come from my using a *formerly hidden function of the Game* itself (the escape hatch) while telling you the Game must go on to its end.

### **More on Nature Spirit Incarnations**

"The current news is featuring this 'new' information on 'the intelligence of dogs'. They say that dog barks and sounds are language. No kidding. All animals have some sort of language and communications. *The Higher Self of the nature realm is the Planetary Higher Self*. This being, as stated in previous Matrix 5 materials, is wrongly referred to as 'mother Earth'. Refer to past segments on this topic.

The Earth Planetary Spirit has a full range of incarnations just as our Higher Selves do. The Planetary Higher Self is as intelligent as our Higher Selves are, but the path of experiences is *vastly different* from ours. This does NOT mean that there is no intelligence in the Planetary incarnations. There are low, mid and Advanced incarnations for that being as well. A low level nature spirit incarnation can compare to a low level Earther Higher Self incarnation. They are parallel but like comparing pineapples to bananas - way different. A



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

low level human (non-minion) incarnation comes across as a dim bulb in the intelligence department, for example. The animal 'group soul' is a processing segment of the Planetary Higher Self and under that being's control.

The nature spirit realm includes mineral, plant, insect and animal. It also includes elemental - salamander (fire), undine (water), sylph (air) and fairy/gnome (earth). Advanced incarnations include diva of various levels. These are a study unto their own and, if you are interested, there are books out there that can give you clues. The concern for *us* is *our* path and *our* Higher Selves. Way on down the line we will be able to merge with Planetary Higher Self *knowledge* in higher densities.

I have spoken briefly with the Planetary Higher Self (on 2 separate visits) who recognizes me for who I am. Interesting being. Shim is accessible, to a certain degree, to those who can discover the location. The Planetary Higher Self prefers to concentrate on shim's incarnations and path. Curiosity visits are discouraged. There is distress over the abomination of minion incarnations and the ravages of Earth by irresponsible incarnates and aliens, but despite this, the Planetary spirit is also dealing with these as experiences and processing information. Remember that Monroe stated *the Earth will regain the pristine condition, devoid of any cities/pollution/etc, in the future*. Refer to the *Journeys Out of Body* trilogy.

When a species becomes extinct, it just means the *knowledge gained through that species is now complete*. This is a good sign. The wailing over extinct species comes from Lightsiders who value the body more than the spirit. They don't understand the nature of the Planetary Spirit path and think they are assisting when they are actually interfering. These people, in error, believe they are the 'superior development'. They are not. *Being different does not make one path superior or inferior to the other*. The hand-wringing over beached whales/dolphins is pure Lightsider control crap overly concerned with the physical and doing what *THEY* think is 'best' *without* the concern of *why* the Planetary Spirit is doing this. Suicide in the nature realm is just as valid an *experience* as it is in humans. I've seen sea gulls wait on the side of a busy road then throw themselves in front of a car to die. *Being different does not make one path superior to another*. Lightsiders transfer their values/desires to *nature path incarnates* which have a *totally different* set of values/desires. It IS a mess but Lightsiders will get over it as they progress.

Respect of nature spirit incarnations is one thing, but allowing them to invade/control your life is another. I went to one house where the person living there had spiders all over. He didn't want to "disturb" them and where they decided to set up house. The *balanced approach* is to require respect for your home and escort any spiders trying to set up shop outside. I tell them unless they're paying rent, out you go. I do know several people who feel SO subservient to the nature spirit realm that won't even kill a mosquito. That's Lightsiders and certain minion incarnations. For Lightsiders, it's a phase they will evolve beyond in some incarnation.

I don't intend to be writing further on the Nature Spirit realm. To know some about it is one thing, at this stage of progression, but to concentrate too much on it will detract from your *own* path and development. The Library on level 27 contains a lot of information on the Nature Spirit realm for those who would like to know more, but this segment should give you more information that you can use when considering interactions with the nature spirit incarnations."



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**Humans and Eating**

Earth humans are designed to be omnivores with cutting teeth, 4 small fangs and molars. Therefore, humans are meant to eat both plants and animals. Herbivore incarnates are repulsed by eating meat, thus we have PETA, hinduism (that's why they believe they can die and be reborn as an animal because that's where they belong!), and vegetarians. These organizations and religions also pull in well meaning and radical Light siders, however, the hard core is herbivore incarnates.

Plants are aware and DO feel pain. Their spirits are of the elemental experience, which is significantly different than those of Higher Selves. We are not to be concerned with their path. WAY down the progression line, you will understand all they do. Plants respond to positive and negative vibrations. The elemental kingdom understands its purpose and has no problem with it as long as it only properly incarnates into plant and animal physical bodies. Their perspective is lost when forced into incarnating in human bodies. The Higher Self incarnates must, and do, learn respect for these kingdoms and to work with them.

**Earth Planetary Spirit - More Information**

People hear about the 'goddess' Pele in Hawaii or the 'god' deva of the Matterhorn in Switzerland. Are they real beings? Yes, but they are not deities. Placing deity labels on beings show a *lack* of spiritual Advancement. These are devas and NOT deities. These are examples of incarnations of the Earth Planetary Spirit. Visions people have of Pele or other major devas are glimpses of the Planetary Spirit's higher incarnations. Some of the places where these beings are found are major volcanos, mountain ranges (Alps, Himalayas, Rocky Mts, Mt Ranier, etc), vortex points and similar energy wells.

I will not go into why they are here nor their purposes. If you are to know more, you will be led to where you can receive this information. The Nature Spirit path is *significantly different* than the simultaneous Higher Selves path. The experiences are totally different and it is not, at this time, necessary for extensive details to be known. As I've said in earlier materials on Nature Spirits, we will all know about their journey much farther up the Advancement line.

Earth Planetary Spirit incarnations include the 4 elementary spirits: gnomes(earth), salamanders(fire), sylphs(air) and undines(water) and all their various sub-spirits. There are many levels to these incarnations and deva is quite high (Advanced) within the Nature Spirit progression. Their purposes all vary.

The perversion of minion incarnation, though, is not part of the Planetary Spirit path as it crosses the two, widely different paths. This is a polarity perversion and breeding, in these days, assists the perversion. I have discussed that earlier. Taiwan had a 7.1 earthquake today. This is a direct action by the Earth Planetary Spirit as are volcanic eruptions and other planetary events. The Planetary Spirit has ultimate control over shim's physical body (Earth) and it is foolish of aliens and Earthers who think they can totally control the direction of the Planetary Spirit's path.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**More Information on the Nature Spirit Realm**

In *Matrix V*, I mention the Nature Spirits and minion incarnations. I have also discussed some of the Planetary Spirit beings. Their Path is significantly different than those of Higher Self incarnates. The Nature Spirit Group soul is connected to that planet's Planetary Spirit. You can correctly look at Earth's Planetary Spirit as the nature version of our Higher Self. The Planetary Spirit is responsible for all nature realm incarnations. All non-dead planetary bodies in the universe have a Planetary Spirit.

A dead planetary body corresponds to a dead human body - the Planetary Spirit has departed. From this you should be able to deduce some significant aspects of the Nature Spirit Path (depending on where you are in your progression). I will give you one more level on the Nature Spirit Path. It is directly connected to that system's sun/star. *The sun/star of that solar system is the next node for the Planetary Spirit.* When, eventually an entire solar system 'dies' (all dead planets), the Planetary Spirits will unite in that system's sun/star. When that sun/star goes dead, that Nature Spirit version of the Higher Self moves on to the next step in shim's progression. Don't bother to ask, since you will know all the what/when/whys when you are ready.

*Each living planet in a sun/star system is considered an 'incarnation' of that sun/star. All animal/vegetation is considered incarnations of the Planetary Spirit.* Note, though, that this path and development are VASTLY different than all Higher Self incarnations (both simultaneous and sequential). Our concern should be on our own Higher Self and shim's development while in the Earther segment of our Path. WAY higher up you will be able to see the need and purpose of the Nature Spirit progression. The higher material is SO fascinating BUT you must be ready for it. To be ready for higher materials, you must spiral beyond the Game. Final Incarnations will resonate to this information far more than any other.

**Revelation: "Loosh"**

Yesterday, after reading something, on the internet, claiming to be an explanation of Robert Monroe's 'loosh' (reference *Far Journeys* by that author), I was struck by the absolute untruth of what that person had written. He said loosh is created by human beings. That couldn't be further from the truth and it shows he did not comprehend Monroe's books. Robert said beings were harvesting 'loosh' from a pristine Earth. At the time he discovered this, Earth was free of all human life except 2 bodies that spent most of the time in stasis.

The writer of that 'humans create 'loosh' is stuck in body centric beliefs and has set up dead ends for Advanced levels to get caught in. I mentioned that to Val on the phone last night and said it was time that I gave some information on the nature of Monroe's term, 'loosh'.

This essence is an *energy vibration* (NOT 'love'). It is created by the Planetary Spirit of a pristine, pure vibration, such as the future Earth (minus humans, aliens, minions, etc). This is part of the Nature Spirit realm and progression. It is not something that we in the Higher Self progression should be overly concerned with AT THIS TIME. The Planetary Spirit is a parallel being to our Higher Self but on a vastly different experience.

The Planetary Spirit REQUIRES a pristine state to produce 'loosh'. I will use Monroe's term because there is no other English word I can think of to describe it. Loosh is a pure vibration that is produced by the Advanced Nature Spirit realm when shim is in harmony



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

with himself. This pristine Earth is populated with plants, certain insects, animals, birds and fish of all sorts which are the NATURAL bodies for the Nature Spirit group soul. Earth WAS pristine at one time. This was before Earth was violated by the Orion/Sirian Empires. Earth did generate loosh back then. Once the aliens arrived and began ravishing the planet, the production was rapidly disrupted. Enter The Game.

The Game is now reaching its climax which will involve the *removal of Earther humans, aliens & minion people*. Earth will undergo a regenerating experience after that. The Planetary Spirit will then be able to restore Earth to the pristine state that allows the Planetary Spirit to restore production of loosh and to Advance even further in shim's progression. The plant, mineral & animal life of a planet are expressions/incarnations of the planetary spirit. The Earth planetary spirit also agreed to participate in The Game but from a totally different point. It is not necessary for me to write further about this now, so don't ask.

Monroe wrote about the harvesting of the vibration known as loosh. He did not reveal why/how it is used and it is not necessary for Earther Higher Selves to know AT THIS TIME, as I said earlier. You will know when it is necessary for you to know. As it is, this whole topic is quite advanced and I can't fully say why it is necessary for me to reveal this information, but it was given to me to do so yesterday. On a personal level, I'm glad to release it because Monroe's loosh has generated lots of speculation and curiosity. Even though I've answered several questions, I also know I've generated many more questions. You will have all the answers you require in time, but you must cultivate patience for now.



---

---

## *Body and Gender on the Third Density*

---

---

### **Ancient Earth – Loss of Innocence**

Ancient Earth humans lived a seemingly ideal life. They were *both* genders in *one* body. Most of their bodies looked similar to the modern male body with an important exception - the genital area. From the outside, it looked like the modern female. However it contained both the female and the male organs recessed within. This allowed them to reproduce with whomever they chose IF they *wanted* to reproduce. They were also able to enjoy the pleasures of sex without concern of pregnancy whenever they wished. They had the ability to shield the growth matrix female egg from the living male sperm. Of course each Ancient earth human produced both sperm and matrix.

The 'Garden of Eden' setting of simple life on Earth, where they could also communicate with the animals telepathically, came to an end *with the discovery of this planet by the Orion Empire*. The Empire, ruled by a reptilian queen, in its ever expansive mode, found mineral and water rich Earth and immediately claimed it as part of their Empire. The Empire is conquering-based and considers non-reptilian races as lesser and males as subservient. The reptilians are the oldest 3rd density race and extremely advanced technologically. It also requires enslaved populations, of its conquered worlds, to work under their direction. The Empire also needs a steady supply of *food*.

Seeing Earth was ripe for harvesting its mineral growth, they knew the need for a large and growing slave population was first. They found the Ancient humans totally unsatisfactory. They were as children - naive, innocent and friendly. However, the Earthers were dazzled by the flashy technology of these strange aliens.

The alien genetic scientists, joined by those of their ally, the Sirian Empire, were told to mutate the Earthers into a *suitable slave race*. First they realized the natives had too much harmony and control as they were. The scientists decided to split the Earthers into male and female genders. They created 2 different types of chambers. One would deprive the Earther of its male genitalia and related mechanisms. The other removed its female genitalia and mechanisms. Dazzled by the technology, the humans eagerly went to the chambers, choosing one or the other.

When the newly genderized humans first saw each other, they were repulsed by each other. The males did not like the female breasts, while the females did not like the external sexual organs. They refused to associate with each other (see also the Law of Attraction in a section below). They remained male with male and female with female. While the conflict was considered good for the Empire, they had to find a way to force them to breed. After much tampering with DNA commands and many failed experiments, the scientists were able to *suppress the repulsion and heighten the command to breed*. The Empire also tried many and varied forms with the Earthers, in their genetic experiments, including using alien genes and various ape genes. This is where the various Earther races develop.

It is *not* the history of the mutated Earth humans or the Empires of Orion and Sirius that I want to draw attention to, but rather the *child innocence of these spiritually immature beings*. They did not have the DNA and gender problems caused by the Empire as we do.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

Their bodies were in harmony with their spirits and the planet. Their existence did not allow for maturity. Here comes the Empire. What started as a Dark venture wound up providing the grounds for spirits to mature and learn far more rapidly than the many placid planets in existence.

There has been a resurgence to become as a 'child'. This resurgence originates from the Light side with dark's approval. This must be avoided for *it is the child innocence that caused the problem in the first place*. This is *not* the same as the joy a maturing spirit experiences (see also the Humor and a Light Heart sections). It is known that the empire is *not* pleased with Earthers and is seriously considering *harvesting the humans* and sending a few to the genetic labs to create a *new Earth human obedient to the Empire*.

Consider how much easier for the Orion Empire it would be if we 'became as children', once again dazzled by super advanced alien technology. The 'gods' of old intend to return. The alien deity says in the bible to be as little children or you cannot enter into the kingdom. The Koran stresses submission to 'god' (that's what Islam means). The New Age religion encourages people to be childlike. Think on that in relation to this section and discover who is really behind it and their goals.

**12-Strand DNA**

There is a *belief*, in many Light-polarity circles, that the original 12 strand DNA that Ancient Earth humans had "can be restored" in the current human bodies. This is *not* true. When Earth humans were a single being with both genders in one, there were 12 strands of DNA. When the alien genetic scientists split these humans into 2 genders, they also ravaged 10 strands of DNA. The so-called 'junk' DNA humans carry today is the remnant of those 10 strands. In order to restore the 12 strands, humans would have to reverse the process and *re-combine the genders*. This will not happen. You can't go backwards for all the chanting in the world with this matter.

With the Dark plot to control Earth, the Orion Empire actually *created* the current Game that *entities with a Higher Self* saw as an *opportunity* for rapid spiritual advancement. The challenges to remember who you REALLY are and to grow spiritually are powerful. Many entities choose NOT to take the Earth incarnational path *because* of the challenges. As Robert Monroe said, those who have accepted the challenges will advance far faster and further than those who don't, but the *choice* is theirs.

It takes many hundreds of incarnations to remember and to reach the Final Incarnation. Progress depends on the individual Higher Self's incarnations and how rapidly they discover and see the Game for what it is. You will receive NO help from the masses. Actually, you will be held back by the masses. Conform, do what we want you to do, submit are all part of the command structure to fail. Due to the Orion Empire's female dominance, they are *using the female* gender on Earth to *set the stage* for their return. *If we were part of the Sirian Empire, it would be the males being used for the return*. You can see why there are many who do not want to take the challenge as well as why so many refuse to accept these Advanced Studies. They just aren't ready for it yet. This is ok as we all must go through these stages.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

### **The First Law of the Universe**

The First Law of the Universe, as correctly stated in the *Handbook for a New Paradigm*, is Like Attracts Like. This is the First Law of the Universe and not of 'everything except 3rd density'. A few body-centric people *believe* this Law does not apply to 3rd density. The alien genetic scientists went to great lengths to try and circumvent the First Law with DNA tampering and commands. The Empire's scientists sought to 'do away' with this law by forcing the Dark will of 'opposites attract' because *this would create conflict of the spirit* and serve their divisive purpose. Divide and conquer. Millennia have been used to try and force it.

People who are their body *instead* of their spirit have much maturing to do and obstacles of the Game to overcome. Once your spirit is mature enough, you will recognize the Laws of the Universe for what they are and will want to live them AND overrule the body's programming. This, of course, sets off built-in alarm bells in those who are in denial and wish to play the Game. They will try to pull you back into the Game by any method they can come up with. *It is a test of your spirit to resist those who would drag you back*. If you wish to spiral out of the Game, you must *abandon* the rules of the Game.

In much of the western world, females are the *instruments* of the Game because the Orion Empire (female ruled) is planning to return and, under the guise of 'equality', females are seeking overt control and dominance. There is the bogus wail of stopping violence against women, for example. Notice it is not stopping violence against PEOPLE. This is why we are constantly bombarded by overt female violence of hitting, slapping, kicking, punching, etc and continual anti-male verbal slams. TV and film is full of female violence. Yet, if a male says anything anti-female, they descend on you like a flock of harpies. "Don't do what we do; do what we say". This is Orion *DNA commands* in females. The companion DNA command in men is *to obey the female and be subservient* to her. Of course this isn't true in *all* cases, but it is in the vast majority. If you wish violence to cease, *you must stop participating in it*. There is much deception in the false 'equality' message. Males and females are NOT equal, but *their treatment should be equal*, something that females resist.

The evening news reported that female executives in the advertising industry are paid more than their male counterparts. Yet, you hear no 'equal pay for equal work' comments from the females on this matter. No, and you won't. You have to train yourself to see, not what they want you to see, but *to observe what is really going on in stealth mode*.

### **The Body vs. The Spirit**

Which rules *your* incarnation, the *body* or the *spirit*? In MOST of your incarnations, the BODY will rule the spirit. This is because the immature spirit is learning through the bodies' experiences. As experiences increase, the spirit learns. By mid-level incarnations, the spirit is confident enough to start to exert itself over the body to a limited extent. It isn't until advanced incarnations where the spirit begins to control 50% or more of the body. At the Final Incarnation, the spirit controls 90-95% of the physical.

DEATH - Death is a big issue to the body for it ends the body's existence FOREVER. The lie of resurrection of the body is a physical fantasy of *religions* who are *body-oriented*. It *doesn't matter* that the life force spirit lives eternally or that *the experiences of the body live forever with that incarnated spirit*. The body *knows* it is mortal and will die. This is



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

the reason for all the timidity with death and funerals. *Bodies with immature spirits are faced with the eventual end to their incarnational experience.* Cemeteries are the physicals' monuments to other physical vehicles. They are a waste of money. The spirit has moved on. Only the decaying shell remains. Nevertheless, when the *body controls the spirit*, they continually hang in cemeteries and talk to the dead body. Once the spirit has sufficiently advanced, *shim* knows going to cemeteries is a waste of time. If one wants to say something to a spirit, *you just say it.*

Another thing about death...why is it that when someone dies, they'd have you believe the best person who ever lived just died? This guy was an asshole in life, that woman was a super bitch, but they die and suddenly they were living saints! This is the body again. Instead of remembering BOTH 'good and bad' experiences, they choose to only remember a limited amount of the experiences. It is far more realistic to remember the incarnation for how it was.

Then there's the word 'death' itself. How that word is feared! They have to look for other words like 'passed over'. Yes, the spirit passed over, but these people don't understand the spirit. If they know *shim* 'passed over', and UNDERSTOOD it, they wouldn't be weeping and wailing and dressed in black. He (the incarnation) DIED. SHIM (the spirit) can't die. Funerals are for the body and for those bodies still living, *not* for the spirit nor those advanced enough to comprehend the matters of death.

CONFORMITY - Conformity is *totally* of the body. Concern over *what others think of you*, desire to appear dressed based on what others expect of you are just 2 examples. In pre-Victorian society, people were far freer in matters of sexuality and appearances. It was the Victorian era, however, that kicked off the previously latent Orion DNA commands. The Victorian era brought about the male prison known as the suit and the female prison known as the corset. Everyone dressed in black by the later 1800's. Appropriate color, *for the end of individuality was the goal.*

Cracks developed in the late 1960's with the hippies and continued through the 70's. However freedom was threatening to undo the DNA commands. The repressive 80's and increasingly freedom-robbing 90's have force people to conform to Orion commands on an ever increasing scale.

Females exerting dominance and running under a double standard of 'do what I say not what I do' is part of the Orion schedule. If a male doesn't conform to this, they are viciously attacked by the reptilian female commands. American 'beauty pageants' are constantly berated by females as demeaning and making a sex object of the female. Yet, the recently broadcast male 'beauty pageant' on FOX had the males parade in bathing suits, judge by all females (female pageants are judged by mixed group of judges), had the males strip their shirts off while the women howled like animals in the audience. Yet, FEW people can see the Orion connection.

Conform ... conform ... you can't say this, you can't say that. You can't do this, you can't do that. WHY? Because they are threatening the intended Orion order and the return of overt membership in the Orion Empire where conformity is a hallmark! This is a great time for *low through mid incarnational experiences*, for *they live to conform*, but very trying for the spiritually advanced and a real burden for Final Incarnations. The more controls, the more of the body, the bane of spiritual development.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000–2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

### **Body vs. Spirit Control**

Once you've reached your Final Incarnation, you may discover that when you interact with the residents of Earth you are talking to both the body and the spirit. If the spirit is immature, as it is from the first incarnation through mid-range incarnations, it is the body and its DNA commands that you are communicating with. Most sex, physical activities and so on are *of the body*. The need for participating in or watching organized sporting events is *of the body*. There is no judgment call there, but it is a *valid observation*.

As the spirit matures, shim (being the animating spiritual extension from the Higher Self) gets slowly increasing input from the Higher Self. Spiritual interests are one of the spirit's interests. This is *not* to be confused with religious pursuits as those are control methods of the body orchestrated by alien groups. The more spiritual one becomes, the less physical oriented and the less religious. Once one has evolved beyond the *need to watch* or *participate in organized sports*, for example, you have entered a more advanced incarnation.

The physical body is violent and self-gratifying. If you try to reason with someone who wants to get violent with you, you are appealing to the spirit, NOT to the body. If the *spirit* is mature enough, shim can override the body's violent tendency. The body seems to want to act violently much of the time and you may find these thoughts moving through your mind. However, despite these thoughts, *the advanced spirit will be able to keep the body from acting on them*. It's one thing to say 'I'm going to beat you' and another thing to actually do it. *Spiritual control over these body functions* is a major goal.

Road rage is *of the body*. The desire for *knowledge* is *of the spirit*. If the spirit is minion incarnational, then you can run into more problems. Those can be appealed to by buying them off in some manner. They do not respond to reason. Only a Higher Self incarnation will respond to reason. When dealing with a body-controlled person, you may well have to talk in terms the body will understand.

A trying time is when you have 50% body control and 50% spirit control. There's a constant clash of wills. The spirit will eventually win with more incarnations. The spirit progresses, while the body remains pretty much the same. Again, we ALL must go from first incarnation and body-rule to Final Incarnation and 95% spirit-rule. The 5% is the cushion given to appease the body so it will be minimally satisfied. It can be satisfied by pleasures but you must resist destructive things such as drugs and alcohol abuse. These will override your spirit's control. The body responds well to rewards like chocolate, physical things and amusements of a non-destructive nature.

You will find rewarding the body will allow the spirit to develop with less hindrance. An example: when learning astral travel - the body does not want to participate. It'll twitch, itch and basically bitch and moan. It fears death and the removal of the spirit. You have to talk to it as you would a child. "If you let me have 15 minutes to do this, I'll treat you to some ice cream." This type of interaction will work. Once the spirit has advanced in astral travel, you no longer have to do this to the body except as a treat for not giving you difficulties.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**95% Control of Will Over The Body**

In a Final Incarnation, the spirit will achieve 95% of control over the physical body it occupies. This means 95% of *control of will*. The body wants to do all body-oriented pursuits, has minimal interest in intellectual pursuits and zero interest in spiritual pursuits. This 95% includes realizing that *the body is simply a vehicle for the spirit and nothing more*. "Good morning" said person X to person Y. "What's so good about it?" responds person Y. "At least you're alive" says person X. That comment is pure body. The spirit knows it cannot die. The body fears dying so will do almost anything to keep alive. A spirit-controlled person would never respond as person X did.

Almost everything is geared to the body in this country: Lose weight, don't eat this, don't eat that, use fluoride, get all your shots, HIV causes AIDS, worry about cholesterol, use make-up, dye your hair, worry what others think, conform...conform...conform. These and much more are ALL for the body's concern so you continue to produce for the masters of the world. You chose the way of death of the body before you were incarnated. Once the spirit is in control, you realize the futility of worrying about what the above.

Once the spirit begins to exert control over the body, shim takes interest in the psychic and related matters which will eventually lead the spirit to shim's Higher Self and the Final Incarnation. In very advanced incarnations, the spirit knows much more about shimself and will discard more and more of the body's concerns to conform. This never sits well with the masses and they will try to reclaim you through varying methods. Once entered into lower advanced levels, you may slide back. Eventually you will succeed and will spurn those who try to drag you back into their lower states. As your spirit control grows, the body's will fades proportionately. You will still reward the body with trinkets or chocolate or ice cream or whatever it may like as a reward for cooperating with the true master of the body, the spirit animating it...the REAL you!

**Body & Spirit - Controls & Experiences**

You can't turn on the TV, in the U.S. at least, where there isn't an onslaught of fear centered on the body and body-ruled matters. You hear that 'this person's dead' (wail/moan), you 'HAVE to do/not do/eat/not eat whatever to keep the body living longer', 'take this drug, use that drug, have your body Probed' because 'something (gasp) may be creeping up on your it'. Germs, wash, paranoia, FEAR ... all for the body's concerns. Even with politics, it's all body-based fears. The American government says, 'if you don't allow us to put in place more fascist controls over you, some unnamed terrorist may do something in this country'. Fear, FEAR, F E A R!!!

The physical body reacts to this every time. Panic sets in. This is a self-preservation response heightened by the alien DNA commands. All facets of society want us to believe it's all about the survival of the body. More myths: all life is 'sacred', the 'hallowed/sacred' ground of NYC where those 2 towers had their event (the government responsible), and the 'hallowed/sacred' ground in Oklahoma where (the government again) blew up that building. You can think of many more.

Physical bodies reign over Higher Self incarnates because the incarnates are not spiritually able to override the body. Looking a bit closer, one might ask if that means that the Higher



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

Self is also immature. The answer is 'no'. The Higher Self allows extensions of himself to incarnate, as per the Game and the Games rules. Remember, the bottom line of 3rd density incarnations is EXPERIENCE.

If the incarnating spirit entered with FULL awareness, that would nullify most of the experiences. Even with sequential incarnations, the first incarnation is a blank page. The remembering of past lives only goes back to their first incarnation. The sequential Higher Selves must also play by the rules of the Game as it applies to them.

The Game, for simultaneous and sequential incarnations, has the Higher Self as the repository for ALL of that Higher Self's incarnational experiences and pulses down information to shim's incarnations based on what experiences shim's had and still needs. Therefore, the Awakened Final Incarnation has the most input from the Higher Self and is aware of things other incarnations of the same Higher Self either are not aware of at all or only to certain degrees. The Dominant incarnations are ONE of those more aware, and that depends, too. My purpose here is not to go into all those details, but to let you know there is a method/plan for each Higher Self's incarnational cycle in 3rd density Earth (the fast pace) or in sequential 3rd density worlds - an agonizingly SLOW pace from an Earther Higher Self perspective.

In low and mid level incarnations, the Higher Self's incarnations vary, from 'blank slates' to minimal spiritual control. This allows their 'physicals' do it's thing, and these 'things' are the experiences, both good and bad, that help the spirit develop. It is also VERY important for the incarnations to see, to taste, to smell, to feel, to eat, etc as much as they can with all shim's incarnations. ALL these sensory experiences are stored within the Higher Self. EVERYTHING that ALL incarnations have done is contained in the Higher Self's perfect memory.

Remember, judging/good & evil are all 3rd density control devices. They don't exist in higher densities. *They are all just different experiences.* Few of you who read this can handle what goes on in conversations among those who have long overcome the false limitations of 'the sacred body'. When you don't support the physical's supreme stance, you can be labeled 'morbid', 'insensitive', 'unfeeling' or whatever. These terms are all used to *enforce the body's control* over the spirit. Once the spirit has matured enough, usually in Very Advanced and higher incarnations, you begin to see the body for the dead end, temporary vehicle it is.

The body/life isn't 'sacred'. NOTHING is sacred. If anything, EXPERIENCE is what the Higher Self treasures. Every experience /sensation that the Higher Self has had through shim's incarnations can be duplicated on higher densities exactly as it was on 3rd density.

You like the taste of a vanilla milkshake? The experience of the taste, texture, temperature, etc., is all stored within your Higher Self, and may be used AT WILL by you, as your Higher Self, especially when the Final Incarnation is complete and that Final Incarnation has summoned all other of shim's incarnations to return. The Final Incarnation then adjusts to ALL shim's incarnations and moves forward. How wonderful. This segment is complex and there's far more to it. I expect most of you will not be able to grasp it in its entirety. Deal with what you can and push the rest to the side.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**Body Identification and Sex vs. Spirit Identification and Affection**

Earthers, *especially* Americans, have warped the word 'love' to mean primarily sex and *control of another*. How many times have you seen or heard someone say, "I won't let him/her go because I love him/her"? Just watch the parade of minions and low-level incarnations on the *Jerry Springer* show. These people don't 'love' the object of these statements, they only seek to control and dictate to them, which is anything BUT love. My Sexual Prisoner article reflects some of this intent. Sex is totally of the body. The huge sex drive was notched up by Orion genetic scientists to make people breed for the Empire. Americans are such prudes about sex due to the perverse influences of religion and that it is a Cancer country, astrologically. Since sex, for people who would like to identify themselves with religion (control), so-called decency (control) and similar, is so taboo (Orion genetic command structure), they have twisted the word 'love' to be the substitute word for 'lust'.

Someone meets someone else and wants to hop in bed. This is lust, not love. Love at first sight is the body's way of saying lust at first sight. Any partnership based on sex/sexual needs as primary is doomed to failure. 'Let's make love' someone says, but they really mean is 'let's fuck'. Using 'love' is soothing to their warped ethics. *Using 'fuck' forces them to face what they want*. Therefore 'fuck' is shunned. Foolish people.

Affection is the spirit ID. This is NOT sex, even though sex may occasionally be the result. *Affection is what you take into higher densities. Sex is left behind in 3rd density*. Affection is very common in higher densities. Affection translates into non-sexual romance, hugging, cuddling, holding hands, kissing, and similar on Earth. You can love someone and never want to have sex with them because you connect with their *spirit* and *not* their body ID. The First Law of the Universe - Like Attracts Like - warns of the folly of cross gender sex, and I've covered this already in other material. However when it's spirit to spirit, the woman's best friend is her female friend or a gay man as sex is *not* an *object*. The man's best friend is his male friend. Unfortunately, het men do not tend to mix well with lesbians as gay men do with het women. Another flaw in the het male structure. In Eastern Europe and the Mediterranean countries, people are closer to expressing their spirit without the artificial constraints of German/British Isles/Irish body ID, anti-spirit attitudes.

True to spirit, affection is NOT by any means limited to opposite genders. Many men are affectionate with women as a means to an end. Then, once married (a curse on this Orion command), romance quickly fades. As one man said on TV, 'no use to chase the bus once you've caught it'. That's because the Orion DNA commands are ALL about *breeding* for the Empire and *keeping you away from discovering who you really are*. The short circuiting that occurs when male and female get together intimately (as I've already discussed) will *reinforce* the lie and *deny the spirit*.

"I feel like a man trapped in a woman's body" or "I feel like a woman trapped in a male's body" are both of the *body*, NOT of the spirit. The person who *says* this has not matured enough to grasp the spiritual connections. The spirit is male AND female. When you are body ID, your body controls your spirit, you will only be intimate with the opposite gender (and the Orion Empire is pleased). When you are spirit ID, your body will be intimate with who you desire *without regard to gender*. When you are spirit ID AND Awakened to the Laws of the Universe, you can have affection for the opposite gender, but will shun sex with it to keep you progressing spiritually and not risk shorting out due to chemical/electrical imbalances in heterosexuality.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

Remember, though, I also said earlier, that an *immature spirit* in a body where the Orion het *DNA commands* have *naturally collapsed* (gay/lesbian), it tends to be body-controlled and sexual revolving-door attitudes are followed. Spiritual advancement is the key.

When you end your incarnation (drop dead), you will eventually be free of all the body's commands that you've been accustomed to. These fade on the astral. The more Advanced you are, the faster these are shed from your astral body. If you're a Final Incarnation, you've come to terms with this and it will not follow you once you're dead. We ALL go through ALL these stages. You are where you are in *this* incarnation. You WILL progress beyond body ID to full spirit ID. How long, though, is up to you and your Higher Self.

**The Vibration of Affection**  
(Special Gold Edition Segment)

Everyone knows about affection and the giving/receiving of it. You can see the demonstrations of affection between humans and between mammals. Affection must not be thought of as sex. That's a whole different matter since even non-affectionate creatures and beings engage in sex for procreation. For them, it has nothing to do with affection. The vibration of sex is Mars. The vibration of affection is Venus. They are *very* different.

Affection is definitely not limited to physical beings. If you hear that it is, you are hearing another myth. The expression of affection varies with Higher Self incarnates, both simultaneous and sequential. Certain species require more and others far less. This is an aspect of the physical that they incarnate into. Earther humans seem to require more affection/touch than any other race. This is due to the nature of simultaneously incarnating, on one hand, and the mammalian genetics that were instilled in Ancient Earthers by alien genetic scientists. This was not done for the matter of affection. It was done because the aliens wanted certain animal qualities in their human creations. Affection was a by-product.

Touch is very much necessary for Higher Self incarnations. This can come through close friendships (both sexual and not) or massage therapies. While the vehicle is physical touch, it is the spirit energy that flows from *compatible* spirit energies that really enhance the experience. You can have a massage from the opposite gender that feels physically relaxing. The female will take energies from the male no matter if she is the therapist or the client. The responses given will be dictated by the alien DNA commands and the shorting out of spiritual development occurs as per other Matrix 5 segments.

If the therapies are given by same gender participants, you stand to not only have the physically relaxing feeling but also have a spiritual energy enhancement. This energy enhancement can also come from non-sexual, affectional contact. This can be through hugs, hand holding, sitting side-by-side in contact and so on. The mix of physical/spiritual contact is extremely enhancing to the people involved.

Same gender affection can set off body defenses in those with weaker incarnational spirits who cannot override the DNA commands. Remember, as I have written in other segments, the body has commands that stimulate fear in same gender contact. This is on purpose and one of the loops that must be overcome by the Advancing spirit. People who still identify themselves as heterosexual are the most limited by these commands, especially those in male bodies. This is because the male body has the maximum creative ability and is more



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

capable of dramatic changes if this ability is awakened. The DNA command reaction is strongest in this type of body.

When we drop dead, the need for affection does not end. Remember, it is primarily a spirit thing. You can be even more affectionate in the astral without a body as the spirit energies are unfettered by the 3rd density body and its myriad of DNA commands. Affection on higher densities can be quite a light/sensation show by those who share this feeling for each other. A 'down' spirit can brighten considerably when another chooses to share affection with him. Another item to remember beyond the physical body, you are no longer shorted out because genders do not exist beyond the 3rd density except as illusion. There is no shorting out as with Earth bodies.

The affectional process will be with us always as we progress to new experiences. It is one of the rewards of a maturing spirit and one of the pleasures that we truly enjoy sharing. If you have difficulty receiving affection here, remember that it will pass. There are also occasions where your Higher Self will give him's incarnation(s) a pulse of pure affection. If you can experience that, you have a glimpse of what affection is outside of 3rd density limitations.

### **The Earth Human Body and the Higher Self**

The alien genetic scientists split the perfect human body vehicle for a Higher Self to incarnate and created 2 inharmonious genders loaded with Orion/Sirius DNA commands and alien genes as well. The new Earth human body was a servant of the Empire and the greatest challenge for a Higher Self to incarnate into. The body has demands and programs that can only be overridden by a very advanced Higher Self incarnation. This happens in slow stages. Some internal shorts to the DNA program have occurred allowing the First Law of Creation to shine through - Like attracts like in the physical too - homosexual incarnations.

The Dark manipulation of Ancient Earth humans presented a unique opportunity for rapid advancement of those Higher Selves who chose the challenge of Earth incarnations. Robert Monroe, in his trilogy, explores some of these. When the Higher Self begins the Earth mode incarnational process, it realizes it will need many hundreds of incarnations for the spirit to achieve control of the Dark engineered physical body due to the nature of the control.

As the spirit learns, it will begin to try and exert itself over the powerful body controls. Organized religion was created to make a false spiritual cage for a novice to mid-level spirit to flounder in. All organized, major, hierarchal religions have alien control at the highest levels. Try leaving one of these religions and see how family and others who belong will try and shame or pressure you to return. Leaving of a major religion for another, even if for another major religion, is a sign of spirit realizing there must be something better. It can still take many more incarnations for this restlessness of spirit to drop all major religions.

This is one reason for the New Age religions. These are intended to be the golden cage for the spirit after it leaves the iron cage of the one god religions. That this new cage had to be developed is unsettling to the Empire and a main reason in their consideration for re-engineering Earth humans all over again. Advanced, Dominant and Final incarnations are not what they want. They want to recycle low to lower mid-level spirits into another breeding, productive incarnation. Hence the Light and Tunnel at death trap.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

Scanning someone they wish to recycle as they near death, the aliens discover *who the person was close to* who has died. They project the person(s) image in the white light tunnel and the image waves you in deeper (See *Matrix II* for more on which group, a member of the Orion Empire, is involved and where their generator is). If you CHOOSE to follow, you can be trapped and sent to another incarnation of their choice. This shows the Empire does have an understanding of the spirit, but it attempts to short this out. The Light and Tunnel trap is a relatively new device, but one that will fail and they now know this.

'Go into the Light' say those who have had near death experiences. They are the *salespersons* chosen to advertise this alien venture. NEVER enter that light. Go up, left, right, back or anywhere but there. The mass media exposure of the Light and Tunnel trap (seen in the film, '*Ghost*' where the hero willingly enters the glittering trap) is to try and get people to *buy* the destination. This tends to play especially well on the *belief structures* of the Light polarity. Robert Monroe's works have gone far in educating upper mid-level and advanced spirits into avoiding this trap. The aliens know well of their less than stunning success here.

The body *is* the gender. It's male or female. The spirit is *not* the gender as it realizes that *genders are a mutation of the spirit on 3rd density*. The bodies' commands are numerous as is its survival mechanism. Several DNA commands are time activated. The female demand to control, dominate and transform the male to her wishes is strictly the Orion *model*. The male desires to breed a dynasty is the Sirian model. As both genetic scientists from Orion and Sirius were involved in the creation of Earth genders, both wanted Earth to be a micro-version of their alliance. Both Orion and Sirius are violent and aggressive. Orion is female dominated. Sirius is male dominated. As above, so below. Sirius attempted (in the very far past) to invade Orion. They lost and the Orion queen formed an alliance with Sirius. Since Orion was far more advanced technologically, the Sirians entered the alliance rather than be destroyed. Sirius has become an arm of the Orion military.

Back to Earth's genetic manipulations - The Orion genetic scientists made sure that the female would be programmed to eventually dominate the male, first through deception and then overtly. The males were given DNA commands to protect the females and, eventually by timed command, to be overtly subservient to them. This is advancing rapidly in America *which has cultural/material control of most of the world* with its dazzling lights.

You know it is of the body if it *is* gender-specific demands. You know it is of the spirit when it *discards* gender-specific demands. Example: Feminists groups demanding violence against women laws. That is the furthering of the Orion model. The *spirit* would want violence against *people* to be the model. This includes the true, but overblown violence against women, but ignores the vastly understated violence against men as women increasingly believe that they have the 'right' to slap, punch and do other forms of violence and humiliation against men. Like attracts like! The manipulative trait of the female is an Orion attribute. *One must cease all forms of violence in order for it to cease returning to you and this also means mental violence and trying to change people (men) instead of accepting them for themselves*. This, though, is counter to the Game and Orion program.

Now, advanced spirits, having had many incarnations as female and male, have learned more and the spirit is able to override more of the physical. You can hear someone talk in a spiritual mode, then throw in some of their gender's demands. "Reincarnation, spirit, blah-blah...but the goddess is who we should worship." Warning... gender-specific to a non-existent deity. The 'goddess' is a code name for the Orion queen. Mixing spirit and gender



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

varies with the level of the spirit in the physical. The key here is if the *demand* is strictly genderized, it is of the body.

Females blaming their problems on males is genderized and external victimhood (it's their fault). It is also Orion which, at first, was ruled by a king. The reptilian female blamed its self-generated problems on males as well. They eventually launched their violent coup on the king and his cabinet and took control. Orion reptilian females can spit a deadly poison which makes them formidable warriors.

The geneticists were not going to give this ability to the Earth female, not wanting to eventually set up a potential rival, but they enhanced the Earth female ability to poison the mind to get their way. This has been done for ages. This is of the body, not the occupying spirit. Today western, primarily American females, who are their body, are attempting to advance their agenda and control, not only of males where they reside, but also in other countries where **THEY** feel they should meddle. The UN's Women's Conference was held to advance their agenda. Well, who's behind the UN? The constant barrage of women yes, men no is Orion, and is also a mini-version of Orion's will over Sirius'. This **MUST** happen according to Dark's plan.

This is known to Final Incarnations and, at least to a certain degree, to Dominants. As in 'heaven', so on Earth. The Game's rules have entered a new stage (in the last century) to incorporate overt inclusion into the Orion Empire once again, now that the Throne of Mintaka has turned its attention here once again. The main learning in this section is if someone, no matter how advanced they'd like others to believe they are, speak of single gender only demands, it is of the body. The goal is for the spirit to control 95% of the body in so far as making the spirit express itself. Reward the body with something it craves, pizza or chocolate, for example, if it cooperates, but be aware that until you have reached a certain level of control, it will seek to exert itself and its commands over your spirit. Never forget that the body's control over spirit: marriage, breeding, religions, ethnicity, nationality, gender control/dominance and more are **ALL** the body in control.

The Higher Self's mission is, by accepting Earth human incarnations, to educate the immature spirit to eventually mature and control 95% of the physical, escape from the gender identification and learn Spiritual truths while realizing religion is of the body and Earth is only a beginning and the Game will end.

Religion and spirituality are mutually exclusive. It is of Orion to equate the two as the same thing. The more spiritual you get, the less religious you get. It is also of Orion to elevate the female over the male. Roger Ebert, film critic, commented that one of Gene Siskel's pet peeves in film was to portray women as saints, kids are colorful and men are violent, evil and everything else negative. Remember the Orion plan. This information can greatly assist the Finals and Dominants no matter which gender they occupy.

**African Tradition of Gender Split**

Credo Mutwa, Zulu Shaman, has revealed his African traditions in relation to Ancient earth humans and alien genetic scientists in a double video set available through [www.davidicke.com](http://www.davidicke.com). Credo talks about how before the reptilians got here, Earth was covered in clouds (like Venus) always. Also, *there were no genders for the humans here!* Briefly (Credo talks in more detail), when the reptilians got here, they promised the Earthers that they would 'make them gods'. They knew *they couldn't control Earthers*



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

*without genders and without speech.* Earthers at this time were *totally telepathic.* They sweet-talked them into going into either a green cave or an orange cave. I think this is the legend for genetic chambers where Earther DNA was cut up and altered. If they went in the green, they came out female. If they went in orange, they came out male. "Males" and "Females" instantly disliked each other.

This carries through even to today. Females didn't like the 'snake' men had between their legs. Males didn't like the breasts on females. They avoided each other. This wasn't good for the reptilians who wanted them as slaves. They taught them speech, but *different speech to different groups.* This further divided them. Then the reptilian 'Isis' taught them about sex. They were swapping partners all around just using them for sex. On and on the story goes. Men have to be taught (reptilian command) to be with females for procreation only. Young boys resist this, going back to the pre-reptilian times where there were no genders. Young girls also resist this, but their DNA is made stronger *to bear children.*

### **More on Gender Split**

With *sexuality,* the fault lies with the alien genetic scientists *and* those who were foolish enough to believe them. One could also say it was part of an overall plan to make Earth incarnations the huge difficulties, but great *spiritual growth potential,* they are. I can see why many refuse current Earth incarnations. Those that take the *challenge* though, *will grow faster and experience much more than those who refuse Earth incarnations.* However, I move forward now to discuss spirits inhabiting Earth physical bodies. The spirit, as I've always said, is neither male nor female but encompasses *both* in *one.* This was accurately reflected in ancient Earth humans as a *one gender.*

When the immortal spirit activates a human body, *the spirit is subdued by the genetics of that body.* Example: electricity put into a proper device causes it to work perfectly. Electricity (still the same) put into a defective device can mean it either doesn't work or works poorly. The alien scientists caused the perfect device to become *defective.* If the spirit cannot overcome the huge flaws in human bodies, *it will operate defectively.*

As a spirit develops, *depending on how far it wants to develop in the Earth experience,* it will seek out bisexual and gay bodies to *express* itself in. There are 'failures' in some bodies. Failures in DNA coding cause ancient memories to slip in. If the genetic scientists' failures are *significant enough,* you enter a *gay or lesbian body* (in regard to sexual orientation). If the failures are only marginal, you enter a *bisexual body.* If the alien DNA damage is totally active, you enter a *heterosexual body.*

You notice how people make their *closest friendships in same sex people ...* the guy with his 'boys' and the woman with her 'girlfriends', as it should be. Then, the alien DNA damage pops in PLUS society's commands/'god'(alien) commands to be with the opposite gender in order to breed. The alien 'god' needs more humans on the farm, after all. In ancient Earth, the population was very low. *People didn't live to breed like they do on Earth after it became subject to alien rule.* The reptilians believe in "divide and conquer". This is why they divided the perfect ancient Earth human bodies into *flawed genders* - in order to conquer Earth and divide the natives.

In a het body, a REAL het body and not a closeted bisexual, although the person can form his/her closest bonds with same sex friends, they do not let their *spirit* control their direction. Take 2 females who 'share everything, every secret' but never sex. Why not? They



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

get married and bitch about the men up and down, but go back to them. Same with het men. They do everything with their men friends. They relax with them, be themselves around them, thoroughly enjoy their company, but go back to the 'ball and chain' and bitch about females up and down. THAT'S BECAUSE THE SPIRIT KNOWS IT'S AN ABOMINATION TO BE WITH THOSE THAT DON'T VIBRATE LIKE YOU!!! You constantly hear what's 'wrong' with men from women and what's 'wrong' with women from men...*yet they STILL violate these spiritual warning flags to please their reptilian masters.* The physical alien damage and society (religion/conformity) keep you in place. The aliens are pleased with you. *You do what they want you to.* Despite your deep affections to your same sex friends, you cannot consider living with them in an intimate relationship. This means you deny the spirit to please the alien masters. Breeders, the lowest of human incarnations, but *one we all have to experience for our growth.*

With bisexuals, there is a degree of release from the alien commands, true. The spirit has more say. They will have sex with *either* gender BUT they want to *appear* conforming by ONLY living with the *opposite* gender. The spirit is acknowledged in sex, but not on the *emotional* level. *That's why most bisexuals will have sex, but won't kiss same gender.* They are not able to cross the genetic chasm set up by the aliens. They also say that being bi is the 'best of both worlds'. That is not true, because their world is sex and not the real reason for sex (an exchange of spiritual energies). Bisexuals cave-in to the physical while *feeling* 'something' from ancient Earth past.

Homosexuals are the *most* connected to their animating spirit. *The alien codes are short-circuited.* The ancient Earth 'normality' shines through, much to alien displeasure. This displeasure is shown in religion and most societies as horror, repulsiveness, shame, etc. They want to 'change' you...yeah, like the aliens did to ancient Earth perfection!!! Be like us, they say. "God" wants it/'god' condemns you. Who the fuck is this 'god'...the damned reptilian aliens and their allies! The 'god' of conformity, the 'god' of control, the 'god' of the mindless sheep! Now, while the spirit in a gay/lesbian body is able to control the body and knows, from ancient Earth, that you should be with someone physically like you, without advanced spiritual training, *they just don't get it.* I gave a lecture on the spiritual nature of gays/lesbians in 1997. Talk about trying to teach something to the dim bulbs! Unfortunately, most gays, due to the constant barrage of 'you're not normal, you're an abomination', have closed down the avenues *that will allow them to move beyond the alien controls in hets.* One does have to be in a *later* incarnation to *allow the spirit great enough control over the physical to ignore the masses.*

None of the 3 sexual orientations have the spiritual stuff right, so that they can explore and find their own way to spiral out of this prison planet JUST by their sexual orientation. We must undergo ALL sexual orientations, *strengthening the spirit's experiences.* The stronger/more experience the spirit gets by having hundreds of incarnations, the more it can control the body when, in later incarnations, he/she chooses a gay or lesbian incarnation to ALLOW THE SPIRIT THE BEST EXPRESSION POSSIBLE IN CURRENT DAY EARTH.

Ancient Earth was the ideal. Robert Monroe said this, as well as Credo Mutwa and myself. Monroe told one of my groups that if you want to live in a *past* Earth, don't go to Atlantis, go back to Ancient Earth with full telepathic abilities, no war and no genders! The constant fighting between genders reflects a *deep* recognition that "there is something wrong". The chopped-up DNA we have within our bodies partially dealt with the telepathic abilities that were natural.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

To summarize:

**heterosexual** - spirit denied/alien codes given free reign. Breeders. Ancient Earth physical completely dormant. Guardians of reptilian desired behavioral patterns. Earliest incarnations.

**bisexual** - spirit has limited acknowledgement/alien codes still control in home lifestyle and in breeding. Possibility of expansion by incarnation. Spiritually advancing. Ancient Earth physical partially active.

**homosexual** - spirit has greatest opening in modern Earth experience, but, depending on maturity of spirit, the amount of maturity shown through physical. Ancient Earth physical attraction active. Greatest promise in rapid spiritual development. If this is uncomfortable to you, push it aside. It'll make sense in a *later* time, for you.

### **Taking It One Step Further**

The spirit/physical connection has a double cause of flaws. First, the physical, due to meddlers messing with Earth human DNA (going back to Ancient Earth, as I've already discussed with you). Second is the maturity/development of the Spirit.

Once the Spirit (in connection with the Higher Self gaining experiences) has *matured*, shim will overcome certain flaws in the DNA *even* if stuck in a het or bi physical. The Spirit is all powerful, but shim has to learn that it is, and learn *how to develop shim's abilities* and *gain the wisdom* that knowledge should bring. The immature Spirit **MUST** learn, experience and gain wisdom to *function efficiently*. The *maturing* Spirit must *continue* this process, but once begun, *the spiral to sail away is also started*. Minion incarnations will **NOT** develop this way, but that's a different story. Here, I'm only discussing incarnations with Higher Selves.

Put on a suit of armor. How can your physical move around in it? Not at all fluid, not in the manner it can move without the armor. It's the same with the Spirit. View the physical as a "suit of clumsy armor" restricting the movement of the Spirit. However, *unlike* this comparison, *once the maturing Spirit gets into the physical, shim can overcome the limitations of the armor (physical) no matter what the orientation*. True a gay or lesbian physical is far easier to *adapt to*, like chain mail (gay/lesbian) to plate mail (het). There is more fluidity to chain mail than plate. This information should make you all think and search deeper.

### **Male/Female Aspects**

In Ancient Earth, the human was both male and female in one being. The alien meddlers came and split the genders and, among other things, *weakened the spirit's expression through the physical body*. Depending on if one chose the *creative male body* or the *nurturing female body*, the other aspect was suppressed. The male body produces life by itself - the living sperm. The female body does not produce life by itself, but rather is the *host* for the living sperm, which *uses the female egg matrix to develop*. The female is the *incubator for this event*, but **NOT** the creator of life. It is not the female aspect. Females who create other than life (which they can't), are tapping into their male part of their spirit. It is not enough to overcome the limitation of the female body to create physical life, **BUT** it does create mental (music, art, etc) and *translates that into the physical*. Males, if in



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

sufficient touch with their spirit, can also nurture to varying degrees, but not as naturally as those in a female body. In gay/lesbian bodies, the meddler DNA commands are neutralized thus allowing the Ancient Earth 'Like Attracts Like' (which is the natural order). The spirit *can show more of itself* in these bodies, although the lesbian body (due to meddlers creating genders) still cannot create life, which is quite *frustrating* to the spirit occupying.

*The inability to create life by females is part of their bitterness, part of the reason why they started the myth that life is created by them.* It is not. Why can't females be happy being females? Because the spirit knows it is wrong to be split into gender ...unnatural. Unfortunately, without the proper spiritual education, the genders don't know why things are as they are.

The suppression *currently* "in vogue" - the suppression of the male (giver of life) has to do with the intended return of the meddlers and their queen, a female dominated society. The false idea that "female is superior to male" *started with them* and caught on due to the insecure nature of the vast majority of females on this planet. True, they should be treated equally, but their purposes are quite different.

As it says in the Handbook, one of the major problems with Earth is the females inhabiting it (centered on the American continent). The females are playing into the hand of the meddlers instead of being true to their spirit. There are exceptions, but they are few, far between and ignored by the too vocal majority. Much more could be said about these topics, but enough for now.

### **Givers of Life**

Myth would have everyone *believe* that the female is the giver of life, the source of life. This is false. The male is the giver of life. The sperm is alive when leaving the male, alive all on its own. It seeks the female egg as the egg is the matrix needed for the sperm to advance in its life.

The egg, *by itself*, is just a lump of matter. It has no life of its own. *The myth of female as the giver of life came from those uneducated who saw the female as the one who bears a child.* The female is the bearer of life NOT the *giver* of life. The female is the oven for the bread to bake. The female serves an important purpose in the *life game* started by the reptilians *when they split humans into 2 genders.*

The myth serves the reptilians, who are a female-dominated society. To keep the female as central is necessary for them. While males and females should be treated equally, they are not equal. Each has its strong points and weaknesses, due to reptilian meddling. Why do females insist they can do anything a male can do? Credo Mutwa says, in his video, that females worship any being they feel is above them. This is why females aren't happy being females alone, they try to become men. Males (except for drag queens-but that's another story) don't want to become as females. It's because the females are more sensitive to what they lost in Ancient Earth than most males are. But instead of trying to understand what happened and why, they mistakenly believe they can absorb male traits by emulating them...dressing like men, talking like men, hanging with men but at the same time almost constantly criticizing men.

*It is not that one gender is superior to another, it's that they are both different with different purposes.* Equal treatment yes, but if females *really* want to be on par with males,



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

they will have to give up some of the *status* they have had and still enjoy. They don't want that. Why? Again, the reptilian mode. The Orion queen is returning. Females will be in control, NOT Earth human females, but reptilian females. The reptilian part of the human brain is vibrating to the advancing reptilian overt take-over. Put 2 and 2 together.

### Lesbian Energies

I've already explained some matters with *sexuality*. There is more to understand on lesbian energy, since the *female physical is dependent on recharging from the male* (giver of life). It is similar to the explanation of gay male physical. As with the gay male, the lesbian physical's SPIRIT is able to handle the physical body due to a disruption of meddler DNA changes. As ALL spirits are both male and female, thus the same energy, the spirit needs no recharging as the physical does. The spirit in a lesbian body (as with gay men) KNOWS it *doesn't need the opposite physical gender*. It also KNOWS the *opposite gender, in sexual relationships, can have an unwanted effect that will inhibit growth*. This inhibition factor was designed by the meddlers to restrict spiritual growth.

One thing to keep in mind, just because the spirit has optimum growth possibilities in a gay or lesbian body, *doesn't mean the spirit is more advanced*. Nope. A spirit can choose a gay/lesbian body *while immature for certain experiences*. This is very obvious. A more advanced spirit *can and does* have het incarnations *to gain other types of experiences that we all need*. Put an advanced spirit in a gay/lesbian body and you have potential for tremendous growth, accomplishing in 1 incarnation what would have taken several incarnations. This is what I chose for my Final Incarnation. This is MY path, not THE path. Remember what I told you in my Incarnations piece. At different times in your own spiritual development you DO chose gay, lesbian and bisexual physicals. You NEED ALL these experiences to progress onward and continue your spiral out.

Back to lesbian physical – the spirit knows the opposite gender is not needed as it generates enough energy by itself. The storage battery aspect of the female is neutralized by a glitch in the DNA that the meddlers did not count on. The lesbian does not 'need' a male just as the gay man does not 'need' a female. The spirit, whether mature, immature or somewhere in-between, is in control.

It is *possible* for a man or woman to cause the glitch in the DNA physical *if the spirit advances enough through its own awakening*. The spirit can accomplish ANYTHING. There are men and women who were hets for significant parts of their lives, then they seem to awaken to a new path that requires a gay or lesbian body. This is the spirit evolving sufficiently enough to CAUSE the DNA glitch. These people have families, but realize they *must now chose a path more suited to their awakened status*. This does NOT work in reverse.

Once the glitch appears in the physical, *it can not be removed by others*. (True, if a genetics lab got a hold of them, it would be possible to do, but only by physically going in and altering the DNA as was done in ancient Earth.) The glitch can be *temporarily suppressed* and the person can *try to conform* to what fellow prisoners on the planet Earth would like (meddler's Earth), but it is too powerful to suppress for long. Astrologically, the energies for this are the planet Uranus (gay life in general/gay males specific) and Neptune (lesbian energy combined with Uranus). URANUS WILL <NOT> BE DENIED. It's the ONLY planet that cannot be circumvented. Roll with it and you do well. Fight it and you WILL suffer. Uranus rules the upcoming chaos described in the Handbook.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**Final Incarnations and the Female**

The female incarnation is good for learning about the psychic and experiencing the fundamentals of it. This is excellent for the spirit to learn. However, for a Final Incarnation, the female body would be a major impairment for such an advanced spirit because the body cannot produce life and has always to be recharged from a male (unless lesbian), but even if lesbian, cannot produce life. The Final Incarnation needs unlimited creative ability/force that is impeded by a female body. Of course if a Higher Self wants to have a Final as a female body, shim can. Also, it was far more advantageous in a female form in pre-1850's female bodies when they were true females. The Orion DNA activation in both female AND male bodies makes modern females far less likely to be compatible for a Final Incarnation. It would seem that the Higher Self (it is in my case) would want the most advantageous physical for the Final to operate as smoothly as possible. This is true in a male incarnation. Two of my Dominant Incarnations were female, but pre-1850's: one very psychic and one very interesting.

You won't have psychic interests or inclinations unless you've had female incarnations. Once you've had numerous, psychic interested female incarnations, the spirit has learned what shim needs and takes that information over into male incarnations. Shim can go back and forth until shim gets to the level needed to carry the information into a male creative incarnation that will use the psychic information learned. The male physical can handle this spirit far better. There is no frustration at having lost the ability to create life. Too many frustrations in modern female bodies. Therefore, my conclusion is the odds are heavily favored for a Final Incarnation to be male. There MAY be exceptions, but then there may not be either. It's an individual Higher Self's decision and I won't be conducting a poll of them. Just something else to consider.

**Equality Means Equality**

The predominant whine with women is that they want equality with men. They want to be treated as men treat each other, which is what equality is. THIS IS A LIE. This is the Orion DNA command in operation. The innocent, well sounding phrase of Equal Treatment is valid IF it were true. So, women want to be treated as men, that includes stripping females of their special treatments. No longer does a male excuse his mannerisms and speech nor change them when a female is around. If everyone's the same, and women want to be treated as men, then fart and burp away guys. Do what comes natural, curse up a storm, talk sex talk and speak your mind. But wait, when you do that, the same females who whine equality suddenly complain how can he do that in front of a woman. If you can't stand how men treat men, then don't whine for the treatment. The First Law of the Universe - Like Attracts Like. There's nothing more UN-alike than Earth's gendered humans.

It is a planned error for Earth genders to be compared to magnetic polarity - see how they attract, when actually the Earth genders are electric as our Higher Selves are energy beings. Think as the Higher Selves are car batteries manifesting in negative (female) and positive (male) incarnations since the alien genetic scientists did their business. Touch the positive to a positive of another battery or negative to another negative, and you have a free flow of power. Touch the negative to the positive and it will blow. This is similar and far less visibly dramatic, but nevertheless true, when a male and a female get together. There is an electrical and also a chemical shock that reinforces the Orion DNA commands and makes it harder for the Higher Self to operate in the physical of Earth bodies.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

If Earth females REALLY wanted equality, they'd take the benefits along with the liabilities. THEY DO NOT. They insist on a double standard. Well, that's not equality. They were never intended to have equality, they intend superiority and control with subservient men, just as on Orion. Females believe they can say whatever THEY want to about men, but damn the male who dares think he can get away with saying similar about females. They would never get that far unless Orion also implanted latent subservient DNA commands in the male body.

Women love to use the tears to get a male to submit. This is done on purpose when things aren't going their way. Women rely on tears to control a man in many instances. It is important to remember that a woman crying is like a woman breathing. So what? Women always cry and it should not be treated, in most cases, as anything more. Women screaming is another device to draw attention to themselves. When a woman perceives herself as no longer in control of a situation, the majority of them will either cry or scream.

For example: 2 men decide they want to fight. A female standing nearby doesn't want it, so she screams to draw attention to herself and what she wants. If both men want to fight, let them. It's an experience for them. In this case, however, it wasn't sanctioned by the female, so she uses one of her attention grabbing weapons to bring the situation under her control. If SHE whispered some poison into a man's ear and he was fighting for her, that's another story. It has her sanction and is ok.

These Orion DNA commands are far too strong for low through mid-advanced level incarnations to override. It is part of the Game and its new rules. Those who are high Advanced or Final Incarnations will take on the role of observer here, in disgust for the most part, whether male OR female. Final, Dominant or highly Advanced Incarnations never defend their gender for they recognize them for what they are. They also refuse or resist being pulled into the dramas initiated by Earth females in their quest to rule. Fortunately, this drama on Earth will shortly be undergoing drastic changes. More for you to think on.

### **A Curse Or An Experience?**

A female acquaintance of mine commented how she feels unfortunate to be currently in a female body due to the awakened Orion DNA commands. I have written on the effects and the problems caused by the alien meddling and my observations from the perspective of a Final Incarnation.

First of all, when reading these materials, you must read them as who you *really* are and NOT from your *physical perspective*. Defending a gender because of its nature, rather than the developing spirit within, indicates you still have a way to go in your progression. You are NOT your body. If you're "only human", all you will get from reading this material is the realization that you aren't ready for it yet.

While the challenge of the awakening Orion DNA began in the 19th century and has grown into the still developing monster of today, there are still places in the world where the Orion plague has not taken over. These are places where women are still women and do not seek to become men.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

Nevertheless, just as when the genetic scientists split the Earth humans into genders, this female dominance, Orion style, and spirits who choose to incarnate in these bodies now, will have their experiences both as females seeking power and dominance over men and as men who cater and serve their female mistresses. If the Orion mode is followed to completion, it'll be Planet of the Harpies centered in the USA (Unruly Shrews of America).

BUT, it's the experiences and the challenges your spirit must overcome to rule the body and not the Orion visa-versa. To overcome the physical, you must connect to your Higher Self. Hang in there for the body ruled people will howl at you for not conforming. In Washington, the Violence Against Women act is slithered through Congress and Hillary said she wanted to go to the Senate to "do everything for women". This is more of the same Orion crap. If it was Violence Against *People* act, that's a different story, but the legislation leaves it open for continued violence by females against males while banning the reverse. This caters to the Orion DNA commands and return of the Empire.

When you are a very Advanced incarnation in a female body, you recognize how the body is being manipulated and can control its urges to become dominant. The seeming curse of being in this type of female body can become an excellent experience for the spirit. Your Higher Self *chose* that gender *for specific reasons* that you will discover *when* you connect to the Higher Self. Remember: it's not a curse. It's an experience.

**Gender Problems – "Adam and Eve"**

On the *Sci-Fi* channel series, *Lexx*, this space trollop takes her ship and 2 assistants to an all male planet, in the opening episode. The senior male on this planet was asked, by one of the bimbo's assistants, how they reproduce. It was correctly stated that they use some of the sperm and place it into a genetically engineered matrix and make another male when needed. The need for the female 'oven' was made obsolete. The senior male also noted that when females are in society they breed contention and a reproducing competition that destroys harmony (SO true).

When you go to the bible fable of Adam and Eve, it does, in a story way, tell how there was one gender on Earth. The lie is that the alien 'gods' want you to believe there was only one being in the Garden of Eden (Earth). This was not true. They want you to believe this one being was lonely. Well, as there were many beings, not only one, they were not lonely.

Next 'god' causes a deep sleep to fall on Adam (aliens drugged the one gender human), removed a rib (the cheaper cut per Archie Bunker) and formed Eve. This is a clumsy story of the genetic splitting of the Ancient earth human into 2 genders. Adam didn't become male only until 'god' took part of the body. Adam retained the creative/life-giving ability, but the matrix needed for the live sperm to develop was shuttled over to Eve. Now, in the story, Lilith is described as before Eve and Adam's first 'wife'. It could be that Lilith was Adam's companion (one of the androgynous Ancients) who opposed the genetic manipulation of Adam, therefore Lilith is called 'evil' and driven off. Remember, the bible is pure propaganda for the alien 'gods' and is NOT history but historical FICTION.

A lot more could be said about that parable, but the crux of the matter is that the *matrix*, which the living sperm needs, is currently held within the female. In the *Lexx* episode, the all male planet long ago developed the matrix and therefore the female was no longer essential. The technology exists today to also create this matrix on Earth, but will never be allowed under the current reality. The male/female split is necessary for contention and



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

division to split the population and feed the 4th density Dark beings. The female body is *technically* obsolete because of the genetic solution with the matrix. *The optimum, however, is recombining the genders on Earth.* If they pulled them apart, they could rejoin them. This will NOT happen, though.

The next thing to ask all of you is who *are* you? Are *you* your body or is the body merely a *convenience* to gain experiences? If you are your body, you will object to the elimination of the female body because your spirit is either not mature enough to have access to this type of information and therefore you are your body or you are a minion spirit. If you're reading this and you are body identified, the first option applies. Minions will never read *Matrix V*. If you are your body, the genetic perversion of heterosexuality is the icon for you. Well, we've ALL had to go through that and have learned much from those experiences. But now it's time to spiral out of that lower vibration. In order to spiral out, you must know what has happened to Ancient Earth and the deceptions that still go on today and why they continue. The female construct comes directly from the Orion model.

Something to remember is that *genders* are a *3rd density event*. Your spirit is BOTH male and female. Genders do NOT exist in the upper dimensions and, on the astral, only *illusions* of former 3rd density experiences would have one believe genders are "standard in the spirit world." Once freed from the genetic flaws of the current earth body AND the spirit has matured enough to receive information from your higher Selves, you will look at the current situation for how it is beyond and apart from the illusion and lies created by superior alien technologies. If you are still body controlled, you will continue to believe the lies generated by the Game regardless of what you read in *Matrix V*. The good news is that, you will Advance and move beyond your current limitations.. That you are receiving this type of information says that if you're not there yet, you are *close* to being there. Even if you don't reach that level in your current incarnation, the information you're reading in *Matrix V* IS stored in your Higher Self and maturing spirit. Once it clicks, you'll *know* what I mean and *what you have to do* next. Reading the *Handbook* trilogy is a great way to progress.

### **Reinforcing The Limitation of Genders**

Last night (Dec 21, 2000), I was invited to a Winter Solstice gathering. It was a small gathering. At one point, the host and hostess had us gather around a small bonfire and they individually started calling on (non-existent) deities. Finally they gave some herbs to the females and some tobacco to the males. These were to be thrown into the fire when their individual wishes were made. The herb was laurel, a traditionally female plant, while tobacco is considered male. I did not participate in the deity worship, but rather observed.

For the very Advanced and Final Incarnations reading this, these ceremonies reinforce the illusion that spirit is male and female. Yes, the physical is, but the animating spirit is both male AND female. As I've stated before, there are *no individual genders* beyond 3rd density. Those who choose to retain their 3rd density gender on the astral eventually lose it and return to their *normal* state.

When given some task 'that is female' or 'that is male', the thumb on your crown chakra is reinforced. In actuality, due to the nature of your spirit and Higher Self, you can perform either male or female tasks. This is why when you participate in an all female or an all male circle, the energy is SO potent, far more so than in a mixed gender circle. In the one gender circles, both male and female tasks are done by the same gender. The power raised is pure



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

and powerful. This is because like attracts like, the First Law of the Universe. All spirits in the same physical.

When you have mixed gender circles, you have the built in shorts and harmful energy surges built in by the genetic scientists. These short out much of your intended activity, especially as you join hands to close a circle. This DNA short is to keep you from finding out who you really are and, therefore, delay your departure from the 3rd density cycle.

Even if you are by yourself, you can do any type of ceremony you may choose by using your spirit, NOT your physical. I usually avoid these "circle events" due to their continuation of looking for *external salvation and deities*. You get to a point where you've moved *beyond* this stage - usually in VERY Advanced, and definitely during the Final Incarnation.

### **Gender Role Reversals**

The Orion DNA commands in BOTH males and females continues their steady march to an Orion society. In *USA Weekend* Aug 25-27, 2000, in the Family section is an article on 'stay-at-home' fathers. This is one of the Orion role reversals required for complete Orion dominance when the Queen returns and Earth becomes fully Orion overtly controlled.

Here are 2 quotes from the article which boasts "2 million U.S. dads now stay home with the kids":

-Web sites devoted to stay-at-home fathers sell T-shirts with slogans such as "Men Who Change Diapers Change the World". The *At-Home Dad Network* support group now BRAGS (my emphasis) 30 chapters - which do doubt duty as play groups for the kids - around the country."

-"Stay-at home dads are changing more than just diapers. They're altering attitudes. [A father] in Clifton, NJ, BRAGS (my emphasis) that his 7 year old son says he wants to be a stay-at-home dad when he grows up. And it's changing the way daughter, 5, plays house. Says [the father]: "I heard them upstairs saying, 'we're going to work, and the dads are going to stay with the babies.'"

The Orion plan calls for women, as in the rest of the Empire, to rule and run the planet. Men are to be relegated to cleaning house and caring for the children. That so many men are going along with it shows the strength of the Orion DNA commands. As stated elsewhere, women do NOT want equality, they want control. The 'equality' line was just to get their foot in the door.

These are Orion DNA commands which always work on low through early advanced incarnations. The spirit is not strong enough to override these commands until having passed the early advanced stages. Those who are very advanced spiritually do not allow the Orion commands to control them. Minions are totally body controlled and will obey.

If the full Orion Wild Card gets played, those who are Final Incarnations and VERY advanced will not play those control games. Finals are out of here anyway. The very advanced will rebel and, at the very least, not participate on an individual level. 2012 is End Game, so there is not much time left either way no matter what series of Wild Cards are played.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**Bisexuality & The Game**

I've seen it stated on various shows that if you have sex with the same gender as you, you are gay or lesbian even if you still also have sex with the opposite gender. I saw one man express his 'curiosities' about gay sex and the interviewer said, "If you have sex with another man, you're gay. You can only be gay or heterosexual." This is NOT true, but it sticks with the Game's polarity of one or the other with no in-between. This goes along with self-proclaimed Emperor of Earth, George Bush jr's statement of 'you are either with us or against us'. No middle road is allowed.

As I've stated in earlier M5 materials, balance is required in everything. The same is true for sexuality. The (erroneous) claim that only 10% of the population is gay/lesbian would mean that only 10% of the population is het.

Where does that leave the other 80%? Bisexual. If TRUE statistics were used, more than 10% of the population is gay/lesbian and more than 10% is het, although the dominant orientation IS bisexual. This is something the Game does NOT want to be known.

I've met FAR more married/married-with-kids men who want same gender sex than I've met totally gay men. Since nature is overwhelmingly bisexual, minions will also fall into this category. With Higher Self incarnations, it will depend on the Advancement of the spirit and shim's control over the physical and its alien DNA commands to be het (OBEY THE EMPIRE) and breed. There is also the *crumbling nature of the DNA commands* which is one reason the Orion Empire wants to remake Earther humans.

I've mentioned the electrical/chemical incompatibilities with het sex, but while they act to keep the spirit from control of the physical, these electrical/chemical impulses actually reinforce the alien DNA commands.

Bisexuality, in Higher Self incarnates on Earth, comes about as the spirit begins to exert some will over the body. They tend to be very torn over the issue and VERY secretive about their affairs with FEAR as the root of secretive behaviors DUE TO THE DNA COMMANDS STRAINING FOR THE SPIRIT TO OBEY THE EMPIRE VIA THE PHYSICAL BODY. As the bisexual returns to het sex, the DNA commands are reinforced and the attempt to subdue the developing spirit is increased by FEAR of not conforming. This fear is what they trust you will obey to keep you in line.

I've talked to a number of secret bisexuals about their desires and they have all kinds of pseudo logic to rationalize all their behaviors. They really DON'T want to talk about it and this is due to their not being Advanced enough to handle it. They must move at their own pace. Having same gender sex will strengthen the spirit OVER the body's DNA commands. This is why, if advancing enough, they ALWAYS come back or look for more. It was a spiritual high that cannot be duplicated in het sex.

*Bisexuality is the bridge to higher development.* Denial of bisexual urges, when swamped in the fog of alien induced heterosexuality, indicates physical dominance of the spirit. Bisexual activities indicate a progressing spirit (in Earther Higher Selves) as the spirit BEGINS to exert control over the alien DNA commands. This DOES happen in mid-levels BEFORE the spirit is really ready for Advanced spirituality. It will assist the developing spirit into entering Advanced levels in other incarnations.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

*This does NOT mean that 'the Advanced levels are gay'. Refer to my earlier M5 comments on gays/lesbians. It does mean that those above mid-Advanced levels are, AT LEAST, bisexual. I won't say any more about that here. You will have to discover more conclusions on your own as you are ready to handle them.*

**Bisexuality and the Universal Laws**

In my previous message, I discussed a bit about bisexuality and the Game. The Law of Attraction says Like Attracts Like. *Split genders* exist, in reality, *only* on the 3rd density. The ILLUSION of genders exists on the 4th density (astral) because the spirits are clinging to their 3rd density characters and have *created* the illusion of having gender on the astral. As stated in Matrix 5, when the astral inhabiting incarnation realizes that shim is no longer the gender that shim was on in 3rd density, the incarnation drops the false gender appearance, reverts to shim's natural state and moves on, LEAVING THE ASTRAL.

While bisexuality is the 'balance' (NOT Balance in the *spiritual* sense) between gay and het orientations, it is NOT the Way of the universe. For it to be the Way, separate genders would have to exist up through all the densities. They do not.

Genders are, as stated several times before, a 3rd density phenomena. The gay/lesbian *lifestyle* is the only pure *reflection* of the Law of Attraction in 3rd density.

However, since 3rd density is a *training ground/learning experience*, the incarnations (*both simultaneous and sequential*) must come to their *own* realizations of this and at *their own pace*. Progressive sexual orientations will be learned FAR quicker in the simultaneous path of Earther Higher Self incarnations than in the eternally slower sequential path. One example - the Errans of the Taygeta system of the Pleiadies (Meier's contacts) are FAR behind in this area - so far behind Earther Higher Self incarnations that their men do not dance for *fear* of "*appearing homosexual*". There, unfortunately, is a lot of that attitude among the sequential incarnates.

It is the Law of Attraction that pulls Earther incarnates into bisexuality and causes the alien DNA commands to panic. The Universal Laws, being universal, will eventually call all incarnates into awareness AS INTENDED. The Universal Laws are a major undercurrent in the Game that the Game does *not* want any attention drawn to. The Game would like everyone to beLIEve *it* is the alpha/omega. This is part of the Game's deceptions. The loophole in the Game is allowing the Matrix 5 information to be distributed to those who wish to know how to escape (NOT fight) the Game. Even if you aren't ready for all the information that you read in the Matrix 5 materials, it is still now part of your Higher Self's *informational base* and can be accessed by *other* significant incarnations you have, *especially* your Final Incarnation wherever shim may be in time. I can't overstate this importance nor the importance of the *escape hatch* from the Game, but it is something you'll have to discover for yourself.

Since bisexuality has the Law of Attraction as its basis, the Game increases its panic by trying to deny the *existence* of bisexuality. Hence you get the dopey comment, "You're either gay or straight". This is a lie. YOU (the true YOU) are all homosexual because ALL spirits are both genders in one. You have not been aware of this due to the Game, alien DNA and control devices (religion, governments, etc).



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

Enter Matrix 5 to provide you information. However YOU have to make your *own* decisions *at the pace you are able to*. Just as you have to overcome polarity in many facets to progress, you will have to come to an *awareness* of genders/ sexuality, as these involve *creative abilities*, and move beyond the extreme limits of 3rd density to realize your TRUE potential. If you cannot handle this information at this time, go back to what you are able to handle. As I've said before, Matrix 5 information is written for Final, Dominant and Very Advanced incarnations only.

No matter where you are (or are not) today, you WILL be able to overcome the limitations/illusions the Game has spun around you. There is a lot for you all to consider in these bisexual segments.

### **Bisexuality & Minions**

The Nature Spirit incarnations on Earth are bisexual *in almost all cases*. The Planetary Spirit is learning/progressing through incarnations in animal, insect and plant bodies. As I've said in earlier Matrix 5 materials, the Path for the Planetary Spirit is significantly different than that of Earther Higher Selves.

Unlike Earther human bodies, the animal kingdom, in almost all cases, is unfettered by alien sexual DNA command structures. This allows them to progress as they need. There have been and still are creatures/insects/plants on Earth that are the result of genetic experiments. These experiments were alien and Atlantean in origin. In a few instances, Orion scientists implanted the DNA commands for heterosexuality as tests for implanting them in Earther humans. The number of species where this happened was VERY small and most no longer exist on Earth today. The way to spot these that remain is to see *which animals remain monogamous once mated*.

The Planetary Spirit does not have any 'sexual hang-ups' so common in DNA commands in humans. Sex is done for pleasure and for breeding, *not* for life-mating, in almost all cases. The sex is almost always bisexual with an 'if it feels good, do it' attitude. When the cycle is completed for the Earth Planetary Spirit, just as for Higher Selves, genders no longer exist and all are both genders in one, according to the Universal Laws. Bisexuality is the *standard* among 3rd density beings, both Planetary Spirit and Higher Self incarnates, in Very Advanced stages. Heterosexuality will only *inhibit* progression.

Heterosexuality is only useful in procreation, a function that is no longer valid/necessary on Earth today. In AWAKENED Final Incarnations of Higher Selves, due to the very nature of being Awakened, you will not find any heterosexuals and you will find most are gay/lesbian as the Universal Laws apply more and more with spiritual growth, and the desire is to live according to these Laws. It is *not* a burden. It is done willingly and eagerly.

The Awakened Final Incarnation spirit, in control of most of the physical, will *override* the alien DNA commands and leave that useless baggage behind. Even if the Unawakened Final Incarnation was heterosexual, once the Awakening process begins, bisexuality will begin as '*curiosity*'. Of course this strikes a chord of *fear* in those who are *body controlled*. BUT this material is *not* written for those trapped in the heterosexual swamp. This is one of the greatest fears of the body *and* the Orion Empire, since it is connected with you finding out *who you really are*, casting off the shackles of the Game & alien DNA commands and reverting to your true *nature*.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

Just as you outgrew your baby clothes, you will outgrow heterosexuality and even bisexuality but IN YOUR OWN TIME *according to your Path*. This concludes the 3 part bisexual commentary that I am sharing with Matrix 5 readers. Consider what you have read. When it is YOUR time, you WILL understand with an "ah-ha" of awakening.

**Asexuality: Living In Denial**  
(Special Gold Edition Segment)

There are the 3 forms of sexuality in 3rd density: heterosexual, homosexual and bisexual. Each is a *different experience* with heterosexuality being the low end, common and least like the higher realms. Homosexuality is the high end and most like the higher realms. Then there is a state known as 'asexual'. This is where one *professes* to have 'no sexual inclinations'. This state is not based on any medical or age reason, but just reflects someone who claims to not to want to engage in sex.

This is a phase of denial *between* heterosexuality and the other more advanced stages of sexuality. This is body ID induced and stems from the person not obeying their DNA commands, but *not yet strong enough* to act out non-heterosexual inclinations. This stalemate usually results in asexuality or a standoff between the body ID and the spirit in *transition*.

Many religious orders *claim* celibacy. This is mostly for public, Lightsider impressions because behind closed doors, all types of activity *can* and *do* occur. To be fair, though, there is a small percentage of those orders who really *do* practice celibacy. Celibacy and asexuality are twins of the same family. Religions love using these twins to get people to deny sexuality. Denying sexuality will *limit* your spiritual growth, *not* increase it as some Eastern religions teach. But, as I've said before, religions are alien constructs to mislead simultaneously incarnating Higher Selves.

*Sexuality is an important key in unlocking who you really are*. The sequentials, knowing that this is so, AND wanting to delay the inevitable on Earth, placed the heterosexual short circuits in Earther human bodies so that het sex would be a body pleasure and not a spiritual experience, but instead a *spiritual shortening out*. This has been covered in earlier Matrix 5 segments.

If the person no longer desires to pursue het sex, due to spiritual advancing, but is not to the stage where they can admit that they want to advance to higher sexually, a denial of sex is announced when it comes to doing it with another person. Wrapping themselves in a false sense of not needing sex, they pretend that they've risen above such desires. This is *another* trap laid by the sequentials. This is also why, due to religion, that sex is constantly referred to as "dirty" and hence 'beneath' you. Fortunately, few spend much time in this dead end. It rarely lasts more than one incarnation. The spirit realizes that *shim needs the intimate companionship of like* and moves next into that direction. This may be by baby steps with long periods of denial and retreat into asexuality in between, but *the journey has begun*. This journey will take you far from the asexual denial phase and into areas you MUST experience and do so eagerly/willingly in order to proceed to the higher densities.

You may say, 'not me' now because that's where you *are*. The vibrations of change will assist you in overcoming the body ID and alien restrictions. You will mark those incarnations as very fortunate within your Higher Self. You will come to the point of looking back on your



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

heterosexual lifetimes and asexuality as necessary phases to pass through to learn where you are meant to Advance to.

**The Breakdown of the Orion DNA Sexual Component**

On March 14, 2001, *Reuters* featured an article, "More Americans Having Gay Sex", which showed the increasing deterioration of the artificial induced, heterosexual orientation. Heterosexuality was forced on newly split Ancient Earthers as a way to keep Earthers from discovering their Higher Selves. As I've said in earlier writings, in gay/lesbian bodies, the Orion DNA command is shorted out in regard to sexuality. The article shows that it is deteriorating in those still with the body identification of heterosexual, which is contrary to the First Law of the Universe.

The numbers given in the article are VERY conservative. The vast majority of men who have expressed interest in sex with me have been married men with children BUT they persist in calling themselves heterosexual...just curious. The conflict is with their body clashing with their spirit. The spirit longs to shine through, but needs *experience* and *maturity* to suppress the body's *command structure* in the sexual area. Rationalizing it as being 'just curious' would have them *trick* the body into 'it's just a phase'.

*Guilt* usually kicks in during *initial* 'curious' experimentation. This guilt stems from Orion commands and concern of *what others would think*, which is also a sign of Orion control and *spiritual immaturity*. Guilt, as discussed earlier, is one of the polarity features that Light loves to club people into *conforming* with. As you spiritually mature, guilt becomes less of a factor until it is in the trash of *former experience-generating events*. What is interesting is that *the more they have same gender sex, the more the guilt is overcome*. That's because of the First Law of the Universe and Like *strengthens* Like. The chemical/electrical compatibility between the same gender is powerful and spirit-enhancing. THIS is one of the concerns that the Orion Empire and their lackeys on Earth (most religions, for example) *don't* want you to know.

The gay/lesbian positive media and court rulings indicate a significant breakdown of the Orion sexual command. This is great for the First Law of the Universe. This is ONE of the reasons the Orion Empire is intending to solve the Earther human situation and 'create a new human with stronger DNA commands to obey the Empire'. One of the other reasons is to subjugate the male completely. This is progressing, but not fast enough (!) for the Empire.

Orion intends to make their presence overt with their newest queen. All this makes it imperative for FINAL incarnations to Awaken and other incarnations to process as much information as possible to their current incarnation.

**Gays, the Game & DNA Commands**

o One item in the *Washington Post* today (6/17/02) describes how hard-line christians have formed an 'alliance' with muslims in attempting to block gay and abortion rights at the UN level. Why?

o Nickelodian announces a children's program with Rosie O'Donnell that deals with gay issues at the child's level. Of course, the fear based panic, sponsored by hard-line christians, sets in again. Why?



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

o Vermont has domestic partnerships as legal between same gender couples. Hard-line christians foam at the mouth in rabid reaction. They say it weakens opposite gender status. Why?

o Gay Pride month is June in the US. Recognition is given by many state/local governments. Fear mongering christians are loudest in denouncing these events despite other governmental recognitions of numerous 'special' months/weeks/days. Why?

o It is still common, although less so than say 10 years ago, that one can hear people say, "What they do in private is their business, but why do we have to see it?" referring to gay/lesbian affection being shown in public JUST AS HETS DO. WHY?

These are just a few examples of the Game's *manipulation* and *fear generation* on the *subject* of homosexuality. Look deeper. They use 'fear of gays' as their banner, but *why* does the fear exist at all? *Why* should anyone care what any two consenting adults do - period? As I've said in other Matrix 5 segments, non-heterosexuals are a *threat* to the Game itself (when it garners POSITIVE views) because it leaves a wide *opening* for the spirit to POTENTIALLY Advance to the point of wanting to end shim's *participation* in the Game.

The Game easily manipulates body-ruled individuals. The Game wants stagnation and no spiritual growth. The Game is only deceiving itself, as stagnation is *not* a realistic facet of the universe. Change is guaranteed. It is certain alien DNA commands to 'breed' and 'be with the opposite gender' that *cause* these fear based reactions. These commands exist primarily to stunt spiritual growth by placing you in an *electrical/chemical status* on one of the most important spiritual levels - sexuality. Recall what I've written about the effects on the spirit, when genders merge, in Matrix 5.

The spirit WILL Advance *despite* these physical/DNA commands. That tells you something about the *nature* of the spirit and the Higher Self. Shim will free himself from the DNA prisons formed by aliens and enforced through their lackies of religion and conformist societies. Hardliners are part of the Game's machinery and are parts that eventually will be overcome by the Advancing spirit. The spirit grows DESPITE the alien deity of the bible and the koran, DESPITE the mindless (sheep/flock) who follow blindly and DESPITE countless other obstacles generated by the Game.

The ancient Greek part of history, especially with Sparta, threw the Game into a tizzy with their culture. It was eventually suppressed, and later roundly condemned, by 'organized' (read Game-controlled) christianity, then islam. However, no matter *what* these agents of the Game did, homosexuality continued and, in some instances, thrived. *Why?*

Part of this is due to Earther Higher Selves being on the *simultaneous* incarnational Path. When you *exist* in old Greece, the vibrations/experiences you *have* are stored in your Higher Self and DO influence *other* of your incarnations to varying degrees. Yes, you DO have incarnations where the body rules the spirit (low and mid levels). You, in these incarnations, DO live for/enforce the Game and its rules (part of your *experiences* AND you ALWAYS learn the Dark parts *first*). BUT you also DO grow and eventually override the body. This first occurs in seemingly insignificant areas. These areas, ignored by the alien DNA commands, are the toeholds you need to build up more Advancement. The effect of these first spiritual usurpations creates a slow (at first), snowballing effect on your incarnational path that *ripples through your developing incarnations*. Once the snowball



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

has developed enough, the spirit begins to challenge the Game in areas that the Game says are 'off limits'.

Those who pander to the Game are still under body control. Part of *your* mission, within *your* incarnations, is to overcome numerous aspects of Game controls. Sexual orientation IS one of the major areas. *There are NO heterosexuals in higher densities. It is unnatural.* Shadows of them exist in the *astral*, but they are only *illusions* based on *3rd density experiences*. While you DO have gay/lesbian incarnations at various spiritual levels - ALL Earther Higher Selves do - what is *necessary* is that the bands of heterosexuality be broken. This is also done at YOUR time and with *specific incarnations* set by YOUR Higher Self to be victorious over the alien DNA commands. The Very Advanced stages of incarnation will be found to be gay and bisexual (even if some are closeted). I refer you to the 3 segments I wrote on bisexuality for more information.

If someone whines, "I gotta have (the opposite gender)", *that* is PURE body control, anti-spirit and anti-Law of Attraction. They haven't progressed *enough* yet. These people are not yet able to *understand* this reaction is due to the strength of the DNA commands. The 'gotta have' comes from *the body sensing a weakening of control*. First time incarnations in a gay/lesbian/bi physical can have a same gender experience, then run back to the Game wrapped in guilt. THAT is *built in*. It is by *engaging in continued same gender contacts* that the spirit is strengthened to override these alien DNA commands. It DOES happen.

Lots of airy-fairy Lightsiders wallow in heterosexuality and the illusions the Game spins around it. They don't yet realize that by doing so, they reinforce the *spiritual growth inhibitors* that come with heterosexual couplings. If they use tired, old (read body ID), low & mid level phrases like: 'proud father/husband', 'devoted mother/wife', etc (and, boy, can I make a list of these), they are definitely NOT ready for Matrix 5 materials. They find it a *shock* to their DNA command systems and these systems react in force to such direct shocks as I've placed in Matrix 5.

The base *fear* of the rabid christians and their muslim 'allies' (yeah, allies like Hitler & Stalin) is stimulated by observing *the spirit unfettered* by the body. <GASP> They *don't* obey...they *don't* conform...and they *threatened* the stagnation we desire - hence the reactions they display towards gay issues. Too late, Game players.

The gay card was played ORIGINALLY as a *divisive measure* in the ongoing 'divided they fall' campaign of another facet of the Game (Orion Empire/Dark side). They underestimated the reactions of Earther Higher Selves. Today isn't the Dark Ages, which are the really 'good old days' to them. They released the genie from the bottle and it's too late to put it back. Hence you have people, like the dictator Bush in the White House, who obeying his alien mistress, gives homophobia support and the hardline christians false hope.

June is 'Gay Pride' month. Gays have much to be proud of, primarily in overriding one of the MAJOR DNA commands despite terrible pressure/persecutions from various arms of the Game. Hets are constantly seeking to *reinforce* their *unnatural primacy* via film, ads, tv, music, etc. Hets are ALWAYS showing off their 'private business'. The Game doesn't want you to concentrate on gays in a POSITIVE light. As the Game reaches its climax in these last days, the *failure* of it to succeed in holding back Earther Higher Selves is VERY *obvious* to those who KNOW and are in touch with THEIR Higher Selves. MUCH for you to think on here.



## MATRIX V: The Gold Edition

### Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

#### 'Coming Out' and The Game

The phrase 'Coming Out' is connected today with a gay or lesbian revealing their orientation and lifestyle to family and friends. This is *one* way the Higher Self, through that incarnation, demonstrates that *shim is breaking an experiential cycle* and striking out as part of the *process* of escaping from the Game. On my way home from work yesterday, I listened to the talk radio where Coming Out was being discussed. Whenever matters on sexual orientation, that contradict the Game, are in view, the body's DNA commands move into overdrive. I heard such stupid comments as 'maybe it's only a *phase*' and 'maybe they haven't met the '*right*' person'. Of course by '*right*' they mean *opposite gender*. Why is it you don't hear 'maybe it's only a phase' in regard to someone moving into het orientations? The reason is the gay/lesbian/bisexual lifestyles are *spirit* (as in Law of the Universe) *oriented*, while the het lifestyle is body/alien DNA command oriented.

The radio host, when told by a mother how her 25 year old son Came Out to the family, asked if the son is effeminate. No, said the mother, he is sports oriented which made the host even more nervous. Did he ever date? Yes, said the mother, but my son found no attraction with the girls he dated. <GASP> as more panic sets in. This 25 year old is not adhering to the 'rules'. Does he have a father? Yes. How is his father taking it? He supports and loves his son even though it isn't the lifestyle he would have wished for him. All this fear and nervousness! Why? The 25 year old has broken an *experiential loop* AND has cause his parental incarnations to examine *issues* that are necessary for *them* to view at this time.

This 25 year old's courageous step has rippling effects throughout his family, friends and those who hear his mother's story. THAT shakes the Game up. The Game doesn't like it when people break experiential loops, especially on this magnitude, and disobey conformity standards. That the son is normal, athletic and self-confident demonstrates a Higher Self incarnate moving into more Advanced stages and subduing the body's DNA commands. Those people who support him are going through *their* own changes on *their* own paths. 'Normal' also means what is normal *for you*. *The Game seeks to warp normality into the word 'conformity'*, so a red flag should go up when you hear the word 'normal' being used as a weapon of the Game.

If any of you are nervous, uncomfortable or otherwise put off by reading segments like this one or any other of the sexual themed segments, *you* have internal issues. That you are reading them here shows that YOUR Higher Self *wants* you to be exposed to these ideas to *stimulate* your *own* Advancements out of the Game. Heterosexual orientation *is* the Game. You *will* move beyond that to escape the Game but it doesn't necessarily mean that you will do so in this incarnation. It takes many incarnations to break free and the cycle ends with the Final Incarnation. However, your exposure to this material will assist your Higher Self's *other* incarnations Advanced enough to handle this material, even if your current incarnation is limited.

The process involved with Coming Out is a major step for an incarnation, more so if the incarnation is not perceived as gay or lesbian. When everyone seems to consider someone gay, whether they have admitted it or not, is usually due to the male being effeminate or the female being masculine. When the person passes as an average type of guy/girl and then announces they are gay/lesbian, THAT causes the shock to others. They could pass off the effeminate male or butch female as other than standard, but when one of 'them' reveals their truth, the group wonders how many more are there and those playing the Game feel threatened which is *totally* fear based due to DNA commands.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

Minions *never* Come Out. That is a process embraced by Earther Higher Selves. Resistance to Coming Out shows a body's DNA commands are *on alert* to the *spirit exercising control* over the body in a way stronger than sneaking around having same gender sex in the shadows. The Higher Self celebrates this event in shim's progression as it heralds the move toward ending shim's participation in the Game.

As with all other experiences and levels, you will find Earther Higher Self incarnates involved in all sides of issues *for the experience*. Those on the Game side of the issues will eventually progress to the Higher Self side of them. Observe, learn and Advance.

**The Law of Attraction**

The First Law of Creation is the Law of Attraction (Reference: *Handbook for the New Paradigm*). "Simply stated, like attracts like". This law has been *perverted* on 3rd density Earth to 'opposites attract'. This is *artificial* and *of the body*. This is also a major force in the Game. *This was introduced by Orion & Sirian Empires' genetic scientists who wanted to absorb Earth into the Empire*. It was necessary to mutate the ancient Earth human into two genders and force the newly created genders to bring their warring, incompatible selves together. I have covered this previously.

*If the spirit is advanced enough* (always the Final Incarnation), it will *extend* this law to the physical it *occupies*. In bodies where the DNA commands of sexuality are shorted out, these are *gay* and *lesbian* incarnations. The spirits in these bodies vary widely in maturity and, unfortunately, they rarely understand this gift. This shorting out is *increasing* and one reason why the Orions are considering destruction of current human population and recreated them with stronger DNA commands.

Pre-invasion Native American tribes *did* understand. *This* was a threat to the Game and was dealt with by the evil christians and their armies. *An incarnation having a heterosexual experience can mature enough to overcome the DNA command*. These could even have been experiencing the curse of 'marriage' when they *realize* they no longer can participate in this *artificial, forced state*. When *this* occurs, the watchdogs of Game play howl and berate the person for daring to alter Game rules and try to get the body to exert control over the spirit again. This fire can be part of the spirit's refining when it sees the Game and its players for the control freaks they are.

Never forget, *as above, so below* - but use the *Higher Density model* instead of the Orion model. As long as you adhere to the Orion 'opposites attract', you will reincarnate as 'you are your body'. Once you adhere to the Creation 'like attracts like', be glad as your reincarnational cycle in nearing its end and you are less of a Game player.

This First Law shows its potential in either all female or all male energy raising circles. The energies raised within far exceed those of mixed gender groups. This is due to mixed genders not understanding (or caring to understand) the First Law and catering to the Orion mutation of the law. Remember, they are their body.

When opposite genders come together, especially sexually, there is a shorting out of all potential except for Orion-approved breeding. This is also part of the Orion plan to keep the real you subjugated to the physical. Remember breed and produce are the 2 prime Orion directives. || ?



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

If you want to work with Creation, you must do so *also* in the physical. While much more can be said about this, I've given enough for Final Incarnations to expand on. The spirit seeks the perfection it had in ancient Earth when there were no genders. Consider 'like attracts like' is the First Law of Creation. Spend some time thinking of all its implications and discover more of who you really *are* and *are not*.

### Posturing

*Posturing*, one of the prime functions of the physical due to the DNA tampering by the alien genetic scientists. Way back when the meddlers began tampering with DNA, AFTER splitting Earth humans into genders, they plugged in the urge to reproduce in both genders. Before gender splitting, there was no *compulsion* to reproduce and the population was kept at a comfortable minimum. Also there was no such bondage as 'marriage', but that ideal reality is long gone. The *breeding* urge was placed into humans *to supply workers for the masters* and as a *food supply*. They tied this breeding urge with sexual pleasures and the rest, unfortunately, is history.

Posturing, *the attempts at trying to lure the opposite gender*, have become an art in the modern times. Posturing has been done in various ways by both genders. At first, females did not do what they know in current times. They would use talents (cooking, field work, etc - read practicality) to *lure* a male. Temple prostitutes were the first to paint themselves up for the average citizen (the royals are another story). In ancient Rome, a prostitute advertised by coloring her hair blonde. If you see a blonde in Ancient Rome, you KNOW what she does for a living. This spread from temple prostitutes to brothels and street whores. As the average female saw *how* this attracted males, they began to *adapt* to whore regalia to try and keep the male at home (remember the female urge to hoard her *energy* source and *control* the male in *her* way). By painting lips, etc, the average female in the then Known World started to bring the art of posturing to the science it is today. However, *the core of ALL posturing is breeding*. This is NOT beauty, it's artificial and females excel at being artificial today, at least the vast majority of them do. It is not who they are, but *what they want you to believe they are*, which is false.

Males didn't need *this kind* of posturing, but they did it by being a leader, a military hero, or someone else who the limelight shined on. The natural male power aura of life became more valuable for the female. The strongest, the best looking, the artist, the poet all drew females to their attention. Today, it's the athlete or the holder of power (financial, entertainment, political) that serves to posture them to the females. This is when they can judge the females throwing themselves at his energy, who is likely to be the best *breeder*. It all goes back to the curse of breeding.

However this DNA command to breed is so strong that the vast majority continue to posture *even after* marriage, after breeding and even when older. Society, the overseer for the masters, keeps drilling the artificial, 'you are your body' theme *to keep you in posturing stance*. Look young, plastic surgery, conform to physical standards...anything to keep you concerned with the physical rather than WHO you really are. The breeding command has so suppressed and warped the spirit (unless quite mature), that *they continue to obey the opposite gender command and will live with the opposite gender even if children are not bred nor desired*. Why? Due to a *flaw* in the breeding command structure of the DNA. This could be a rather extensive look at why they 'have' to be with the opposite gender, but I prefer being briefer at this time.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

Gay men and lesbians, *even though* their DNA has lost the commands to be with the opposite gender, *still have the posturing commands* due to their genetic history where it's been so inbred. Most gay men, so it seems, have severely limited physical/superficial structures - youth oriented, how one dresses, paranoid with weight consciousness to the point of needing a shrink (to name some). In the TV show *Will & Grace*, Jack rightfully complains about the treatment he got in grade school for being gay and how he was verbally abused. Yet, this same Jack will turn around and abuse others for how they dress, if their weight is not within his narrow standards, what they enjoy doing, if different from him, etc. *The victim has become the abuser*. He wants unconditional acceptance, but is *unwilling* to reciprocate. This is a TYPICAL gay reaction. When hearing about somebody they may be interested in, what do they ask? How old is he? How is he built? And other similar questions, the hell with who he is, they're *only interested in the physical*. Then you hear them moan, will I ever find love? Well, Miss Thing, you're not looking for love, you're *shopping for a side of meat*. This is *not*, fortunately, observed by ALL gays, but a rather large, LOUD segment of the gay population.

Lesbians, on the other hand, are not as superficial, to their credit. They look more for the *internal* woman, not the outer, which is secondary in most cases. You will find both gays and lesbians, although a minority, 'wanting to have kids'. That's the *breeding* desire. So, even if the section commanding opposite gender sex has been neutralized, there are *sub-commands in the DNA structure* that may still be operational. ALL of these commands come from the meddlers and are artificial to true, ancient Earth humans.

Instead of *developing their minds and spirits, discovering who they really are and why they have chosen to be here*, religion, government, advertisers and those who have bought into that artificial reality continually bombard the rest of the populace *to be your body and keep it within standards* set. Paint your face, dye your hair, keep your weight to *our* standards, wear what *we* approve of, cosmetic surgery, be seen with *the* 'right' crowd, eat what *we* say, drink what *we* say, have *this* medical test, take *these* drugs, smoke *these* ciggy butts, don't have a good time *unless* it's doing what *we* want you to...you only have one life. LIES!

You only have one life as *your current incarnation*, but you *have hundreds and hundreds of lives*. It doesn't matter if you're short, tall, skinny, fat, bald, grey, wrinkled, average looking or whatever. What DOES matter is are you developing your mind? Are you true to yourself or to others? Do you live for THEM or for you? It doesn't matter if you look like the Wicked Witch of the West or are average or less in looks. It's the inner you, the REAL you that counts. Don't be side-tracked into the "I'm only human" dead end path. When someone tells me "I'm only human", I respond, "Too bad, I'm not".

Posturing is just part of the problem, but it is a big part. People do *not* want to *explore* the *why's* of it. Geez, no, they may have to wake up and take *responsibility* for themselves. Why do you "HAVE" to be with the opposite gender? Why do you "HAVE" to conform to dress standards? Why do you "HAVE" to keep a weight of such and such pounds? Why do you "HAVE" to be so preoccupied with doctors and what they say (that's another power giving away topic for another time)? Understand posturing for what it is and why it's there and it is unnatural to your true nature. Be true to yourself - one of the keys to spiraling up and out. Ignore yourself to fulfill others' wishes - one of the ways to spiral down.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**Observations: Breaking the Experiential Loop**

We all have them - *experiences* that keep *repeating* themselves with *different players*. The most common seems to be the Liz Taylor/Donny Trump thing of 'marriage of the year' club membership. As I've written, opposite gender couplings are contrary to the First Law of the Universe (Like attracts Like). The alien genetic scientists know that, so they built in heavy DNA commands to override the spirit. So you have *internal conflicts* between "I want to be with my *own kind*" (men prefer hanging with other men and women prefer hanging around with other women) and the false physical command to be with the *opposite gender*.

This causes many, many problems. The chemical/electrical shorts that occur when opposite genders experience *physical* contact (of ANY kind) will enhance the DNA command structures and work against the spirit. It's only through HUNDREDS of such incarnations that the spirit learns and, eventually near the end of the 3<sup>rd</sup> density experience, overcomes this massive flaw. You see/hear this daily with marriages changing like the changing of oil in a car. They are *unsettled* with being together and get the 'itch' to look for *someone they don't realize*. Although this is PARTIALLY due to a sub-command in the DNA structure to *breed* as much as possible AND it does exist in *all* sexual orientations, it is part of the plan of the alien scientists of WAY back.

I know SO many people who are miserable living with the opposite gender, but stay together for such artificial reasons as finances, children or just lack of faith in self. These are all major victims and 'oh poor me's'. This is also part of the Mid-level through mid-Advanced level trials.

I've always said to people that I understand *why* you got married, but when you realized it didn't work, *why* did you *repeat* the mistake? Of course I KNOW the answer, but I wanted to make *them* think. This is one of those *experiential loops* the spirit is 'doomed' to keep repeating until *shim CONSCIOUSLY recognizes it* and *breaks it* over the protest of the alien DNA commands. "You just don't understand" they say, BUT I do. It is THEY who don't understand yet as they are not ready to face *what is*. Eventually they will, but until then they will remain in these loops.

Other types of loops would include *situations* of any sort that keep coming back into your life. When you *notice* something like this happening, *examine* each of the *players* and see what they all had *in common*. THAT'S where you will find *the reason for the loop* in your life.

Here's one of mine from this incarnation: I had offered to individually train 4 different men. They all had varying degrees of excellent psychic ability, but one after the other, they declined. I looked at what each had *in common* and it was all centered around the damned DNA command '*to be with the opposite gender and their females*' ALWAYS got in the way. Once I recognized the problem, I committed myself never to offer to train any man who must have the opposite gender. They are where they are, BUT they are *not* yet ready for someone like me. That's ok, as it's *their* path, but I can't have such a disruptive influence like some vindictive bitch's interference with training. They ALWAYS want to know everything that's going on and decide what he can or can't do. They want to be "we's" and I do not do "we's".

I deal with an *individual*, *not* the baggage they carry around. I had my loop, identified the common disruptive trait in each example and have *restructured* my qualifications of



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

potential students. Look at loops in YOUR life. What common, 'negative' thread do you find in each example. Once you've identified it, *you can make adjustments* to it and the loop will be broken.

**Shorting Out By DNA Command**

The *spirits* of both genders are male and female perfectly blended into *one energy being*. The Orion genetic scientists understand this as well as the immaturity/innocence of incarnating spirits. It took several experiments before they came up with the current human models, and even here they've tweaked it on occasion throughout history.

What they never wanted to happen is for the spirit to know *who* it is while in the physical for it would be uncontrollable by the Empire *if allowed to mature past a certain point*. Dominant and Final Incarnations would be completely independent. Not only is the false law of opposites attracting part of the DNA command structure, but also is a provision to enhance the blocking of spiritual development, like an electrical short, when the genders mate. Ancient, newly created human beings had to be *forced* to mate, so put off were they by each other. To be safe, a spiritual shortage, enhanced by the female's *succubistic ability* and *urge to reproduce* and the males '*I am my body*' desire for a *dynasty*, was worked into the DNA commands.

The Empire needs *bodies*! The more the male had sex, the more it *wanted* sex AND it was for *breeding* purposes. In more modern times, unless mormon, catholic or 3rd world, the desire is not so much for a dynasty in many cases (spirits are maturing, but not mature enough to see through the Game), but for the DNA command '*to be with the opposite gender*' even if *totally incompatible*. They don't realize they were *designed* to be incompatible *on purpose* - to *keep them so fighting amongst themselves* that they'd find it *harder to discover who they are*. So the *sham of marriage* is followed by multiple divorces, palimonies, crisis, and violence, all because *the body is in control of the spirit to satisfy the insatiable desire of the Orion Empire for workers and food*.

*The short is electrical and chemical in nature*, however it's like a poisonous plant - pretty to look at, but deadly if touched. We ALL must go through the Game and *these experiences*, and we ALL *will* eventually come to an understanding of the Game and withdraw when spiritually mature enough.

**A Few Brief Comparisons: DNA Commands vs. Higher Self Overrides**

*Those Governed By Orion DNA Commands:* Defend/cater to the whims of and defer to the female even at the cost of what or who is right. Reproduce and breed regardless of one's ability to properly care for offspring. An inherent "need" exists to expand the population. Heterosexuality is for breeding purposes, to keep the genders in conflict, and to sustain female domination whether covertly or overtly. Conform/submit to deity and authority figures including priesthoods. Believes in only "One path" to development. External salvation oriented. Use whatever means to enforce conformity and standards. Believes You are your body" (I'm only human) and the "one life to live" lie. All life is "sacred", but kills its own kind. Anti-abortion. A need for someone to "carry on the family line".

*Those Governed By Higher Self Overrides:* Recognition of Orion commands. Treats no one as *gender* but by their merits and desire to grow. Never defers to any gender because of gender. Reproduction based on the ability to sustain new life (first) and the need



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

to expand the population (second). Need is the key. Sees heterosexuality for the perversion of the Spirit that it is, but also recognizes it as part of the Game/experience for lesser advanced incarnates. Seeks experience and variety, with effort to find the current "limits" of experience. Follows own path regardless of the opinions of others, and never "owes" anyone an "explanation" for path-choices. Never forces their will on anyone. Defend only if attacked. Understands of the notion of "external salvation" as a lie. Sees the body as a vehicle for spirit – nothing more. Pro-choice. Life begins at first breath. Realizes that other races use humans for various purposes. Genealogy is meaningless.

**Sex and The Spirit**

The main purpose of sex on Earth is to procreate, bring more workers and food in for the Empire. In centuries past, this was the *only* way sex was approved. For the male, it didn't need to be a long affair, but just the express road: to impregnate the female. This was and is unsatisfying for the female as sex with a male was the prime way to feed off his powerful energy and recharge her batteries. Hence, there were many bitter females being cut off long before reaching maximum charge. Both reflect sex where *the body is in control, not the spirit*.

This also includes the free and easy approach most gays have to sex. With the men, it's sex for sex first, *not* for an emotional tie. With an immature spirit, they can go through the vocalizing of 'I want true love', but tend to fall back into a *body-defined* needs for sex and physical orientation *above* the desires of the spirit. Lesbians are more eager to settle down with another woman and follow through far more reliably than most gay men.

When the spirit exerts more control over the physical, *a more tender nature expresses itself*. It's no longer the quickie (that's always the body speaking) AND, the more Advanced spiritually, the *less* likely it will be with the opposite gender *exclusively*. Not only that, but also sex becomes so controlled by a Very Advanced spirit that it will be put off by the idea of carousing 'just for sex alone' *without* an emotional tie. Spirit controlled bodies desire closeness with other spirit controlled bodies (Like Attracts Like). Obviously there are WIDE variations in control of spirit over body. We ALL must go through them to get to spirit control. Sex for sex alone with another person is viewed as empty, purposeless and very unsatisfying. Sex involving spirit to spirit is deep, energy exchanging and part of the growth process for both spirits. It enhances the creative aspect.

Final Incarnations, once Awakened to who they are, will *not* have children as they realize this as a major drain on their creative nature. Refer to my other comments on this in other sections in Matrix 5. Final Incarnations, even if occupying different genders, will realize that Like Attracts Like and the dangers to the spirit so evolved by opposite-gender sex. This is not likely to be acknowledged by anyone who is NOT in their Final Incarnation, and those are very rare compared to the number of incarnated bodies today.

If you cannot handle this information, please put it aside and get on with what you can handle. All of the topics in my released information have much more depth to them and, in time, you will come to understand and discover more on your own. Trust in your Higher Self and your Path to lead you to where you must go for YOUR growth.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**A Deeper Look: Sexuality, Control & Spirit**

(A word of caution to those who read the following and are not ready for this information. It won't do any good to caution, though, because all of you think you're ready for everything until you're exposed to it. This message is for only a very few incarnates, but those few will understand & appreciate it. It is now time to release this.)

In Matrix 5 I wrote about genders, sexual orientations, DNA controls and related. I took the information only to a certain level. It's time to expand portions of that. I will not repeat all the M5 material here, so I suggest, if you're interested, you re-read those topics.

The DNA command to procreate like roaches is not of the spirit, but of the alien masters. The "I am my family line" is *alien* and *of the body*. The "I have to have children to carry on my name/line" is alien and of the body. Neither of these is true. I've been told several times, when asked why they breed, that they must 'expand the race' (alien command) or, if they know who I am, they tailor it to what they THINK I want to hear: 'to give other Higher Selves the opportunity to experience Earther existence'. The latter is common in low Advanced through mid Advanced levels.

In the current time period (actually for the past few hundred years or so) this production line breeding has NOT been necessary for Higher Self incarnations, but rather *to introduce and expand the minion populations and cause the rapid deteriorations we are all so aware of on Earth today*. The 'Higher Self incarnational experience opportunity' answer is a Light-sider twist to the basic alien command to attempt to keep the incarnation asleep. Also this *encourages* heterosexual couplings which, as I've explained in M5, causes a shorting out of the spirit's awakenings.

This is part of the *progression* of the Earther Higher Self *incarnational cycle* and we ALL must advance beyond it. When you reach Awakened Final Incarnation, you will see more and more of The Game as it really is because you are to graduate from the scene. *You could even have been a breeder BEFORE Awakening to your Final Incarnation state*. When this happens, your Higher Self decided that *shim wants shim's incarnation to be more aware of this facet* of The Game.

Gay/lesbian incarnations have been discussed. Now it's time for a deeper look into the *heterosexual lifestyle*. When a Higher Self chooses the Earther incarnational path, shim starts out with the spirit being driven by the body's desires (Low through Mid level incarnations). With experience, the spirit slowly and gradually exerts control over the line of bodies shim incarnates into. Low through Mid incarnational levels are rabidly heterosexual (EXCEPT in cases where the DNA commands in that area have failed and you have a gay or lesbian incarnation with an immature spirit.) These people are totally body dominated and when you toss in the *control devices of religion*, well you know what you get then.

The *heterosexual mechanism* (perversion of the Law of Allowance) tricks the person into *believing* that they are 'not whole within themselves'. They need 'my other half'. Today it's 'soul mate' (New Age religions) that is the *catch phrase* because they *believe* they are not whole within themselves. These are alien implanted lies, BUT part of The Game. So the male 'has' to have a female 'to be whole' and vice versa. A mormon church leader stated that any man who wasn't married by age 25 is a 'danger to society'. Where's the danger? That he might be realizing his true nature?



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

I've asked several men about their stated 'need' for the opposite gender. I responded that it seems like you are looking for traits that you 'don't have', so you look for a traditional female to bring these into your life. This is because *you don't realize that you have ALL these traits in you already but they are suppressed by the body and the Earther incarnational experience. You ARE whole within yourself* and 'the search' for an external 'other half' is in the same pot as the *external deity and salvation* myths.

Bisexuality is the spirit beginning to exert himself over the draconian alien DNA commands. Along with this, unfortunately, comes much guilt and fear. These are body generated due to your violation of DNA commands. If you don't respond to these self-imposed guilts/fears, and 'society' discovers your leanings, THEY will be eagerly obligated to shove *controls* at you. Bisexuality is a *step* that your *incarnational path* will take you on *so that you can discover who you really are.*

Once you've reached the end of your incarnational Earther path, you no longer 'gotta have' the opposite gender and if you desire the same gender, the relationship is not like heterosexuals have or the delusionary, acceptance-craving marriages that many gays/lesbians want. When your spirit reaches a VERY Advanced level, *shim* will short out certain DNA commands BY WILL ALONE ('enough of that shit' attitude). Remember, as I have said, by the Final Incarnation you will have 85% control *over* the body and even higher control *over* significant *areas* of DNA commands.

This is something you *can't* force. You MUST be *who you are* and *where you are*. However *know* it WILL happen to *you*, if not in this incarnation then in others. Your Higher Self benefits greatly from reading the Matrix 5 materials *even if the incarnation reading them isn't ready for much of it*. You cannot argue/convince others of 'how they should be'. They should be whatever they *want* to be. Law of Allowance! The *complete individuality* of each Higher Self's incarnational path, here with Earther incarnated Higher Selves, is paramount. *Conformity is an alien progressional fixture*. Much more on this titled subject can be said, but this is enough for now.

### **Masturbation**

Masturbation is a very valid form of sexual release. Taboos abound on this practice, especially in the major, organized religions. That in itself tells you something. *Masturbation is one way the female can recharge herself USING HER OWN SPIRIT*. This overcomes the "I gotta have a man" command. Lesbians, using mutual masturbation and other techniques, have done quite well with this. Remember the body is loaded with lies to stifle the spirit.

*As both genders have the same type of spirit*, they contain *both genders in one*. Female masturbation will put her in the receptive state to allow the *spirit* to give *what energy is needed* without the male. Male masturbation is good to keep the system in working order. Those men who go long periods of years without sex or self-sex will have their systems go dormant. This can cause problems later in life. Consider all the bans on masturbation and think why...you aren't producing bodies for the Empire, you have the *nerve* to *enjoy yourself* and you just *might* discover that you don't *need* another person 'to have sex with'.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**A Comment on Balance**

I read something in *Handbook III* something about Balance being a “narrow, (hinting) bland, existence”, which is ‘why beings keep going to polarities’. This just isn’t so. For anyone in or understanding Balance, *it is the best of both polarities with the optimum of passion under control of the being, not the physical*. Take cursing, for example, go into the background of why ‘fuck’ and ‘shit’, for example, are considered ‘bad’ words. There ARE no bad words. They are *words of power with specific uses*. The Light polarity, in its sanctimonious nature under control of *religion*, which is Dark polarity, has decided to *limit verbal expression*. ANY limit of verbal expression is *controlling*.

So-called ‘curse’ words are not ‘bad’ at all. Most refer to sexual acts or human *bodily functions*, neither of which are dirty, they just *are*. However, to *control* people, certain types of Dark institutions (religion, society, etc) have *decided* that ‘sex is dirty’. Why is sex dirty? Because of the *power therein WHEN understood and used correctly*. It is a minor effect of sex to procreate. The major effect is *instantaneous merging of spiritual essences* between the 2 connected people. The meddlers do not want humans waking up to their full potential, so it is necessary to ban sex in all but procreative processes. That’s why all the sexual related *taboos - speech and action*. An aware spirit can transmit much to an open, but limitedly aware person by sex. Knowing this, the sex act has been mutated into other non-spiritual methods - S&M, B&D and such. These involve pure *lust and control* which is *physical* and *not* spiritual. If you ‘are your body’, then that is so. These come from the Dark side. Super-orthodox Jews, placing a sheet between partners and sex only for procreating is a Light side plan. Both sides want sex to be either *very limited* or *very lusty*. *Neither* are into spiritual manifestations. Thus *monogamy* exists, also to *control the expression of the spirit through sex*. Females are the worst in this, but that is also connected to them *hoarding their energy source* (the male).

Sex with *spiritual bonding* is NOT a control method. It’s NOT the pseudo-soul mate garbage that you hear far too much today. Sex with spiritual interchange is NOT the 15 minute wham-bam goodbye. That’s pure physical. True sexual/spiritual expression involves *both* the physical AND the spiritual. It is rare today. Today, people get married (a living bondage/curse) for *control* of the *other*, financial dependency, energy dependency, victimhood/power giveaways (he’ll protect me or she’ll take care of me) or similar. These are all *polarity controls* that limits spiritual growth.

If you’re gender-bound, you’re physically limited for it’s your *physical* that wants the opposite gender BECAUSE “they are the opposite gender”. The *spirit* wants to share with someone BECAUSE of *who they are*, and *not* what physical they are in. The more advanced spirits who are also in a DNA shorted out physical will recognize that to advance the most, they need the same type of physical as the opposite is either draining (female) or addictive (male). A female physical finds it far too easy (unless lesbian) to become *dependent* on the male’s boundless energy. A male physical finds it far too easy (unless gay) to gain the *approval* of his ‘peers’ by *appearing* to be spreading the sperm and reproducing (ancient physical demand/primitive). The more advanced spirits do NOT reproduce, *although they may have before waking up*. The more advanced spirits realize the value of their energy and reserve it for other projects. *Reproducing* is a ‘low to later development’ incarnational function. Realizing *why* not to reproduce is an ‘advanced to final’ incarnational mindset. We ALL have to go through *all* these stages, but you never go backward here...that carried too many traps, for it’s harder to advance if you fall back.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

So, back to the original purpose of this: *Balance is not boring by any means*. Balance can curse when necessary, as Balance will not allow *those who wish to control* to limit by embarrassment or guilt (you know how Light loves to control with them). Fuck Light. Balance can show considerable compassion and care, despite Dark's me-only attitude. Fuck Dark. Balance is NOT interested in polarities' *opinions* of itself. However you do have to *experience both polarities* to appreciate Balance. Balance is NOT a 3<sup>rd</sup> density Earth prime function. It is far advanced, but then certain spirits have chosen to incarnate here from far higher densities to try and assist Earth at this time *due to damaging energies threatening higher densities*. It is in the interest of Balance to do what it can to assist Earth. So there!

**The Challenge: Undo Excessive Polarity Control**

I have mentioned that *one of the purposes of Higher Self incarnations into Earther bodies, beside the main purpose of individual growth and experiences, is to initiate and assist in the deterioration of the Orion DNA command structure*. There are beings of Balance who well know the polarities' desire to expand Dark/Light chaos into densities that have overcome polaric problems. The polarities will eventually fail. This is *guaranteed*. However, they will not give up quietly and will think there is a way to overcome the end of polaric existence *to the very end*.

Robert Monroe talked a bit about the importance of the planet Earth in his second book. This dealt with the harvesting of "loosh" which is Monroe's term for a specific energy created by the Earth planetary spirit. Dark wishes to use this energy for its own purposes.

When Orion perverted Ancient Earthers into genders and added DNA command structures contrary to the Laws of the Universe, those higher density beings saw what they were attempting to do *for the long run*. They also saw the opportunity for rapid growth by those Higher Selves who chose to incarnate on Earth and serve a higher purpose as well. Most Higher Selves declined the fast paced Earth Path and chose the slower, safer sequential incarnational path on other worlds.

Those higher density beings knew there was only one way to cause a deterioration of the Orion DNA command structure. This was by *active participation of the higher density beings in the incarnational process*. As the Higher Self, with Earther incarnations, matures, the *energy* of the Higher Self becomes stronger. IF only those with Higher Selves incarnated on Earth, the command structure of the DNA would deteriorate more rapidly. Enter minion incarnations. The breed like roaches command is to ensure minion incarnations, which have no higher density being input. *This is Dark's attempt to counter the Higher Selves*. The 'defer to animals' *idea* is minion oriented.

When a Higher Self incarnates in any human Earther body, the vibration of shim's spirit itself begins the disruption of the Orion DNA command structure. The Higher Selves incarnate in all races and genders not only for the *experience* but also to *begin the disruption of the command codes in as many Earther bodies as this disruption is passed on in the genes*. There is *nothing* Dark can do about this except to *increase minion population OR destroy all the physical bodies* and re-engineer a new type of Earther being.

The gay/lesbian sexual orientation, as mentioned before, is one where the 'anti-First Law of the Universe DNA command' was disrupted. Since Higher Selves' incarnations are *simultaneous*, the *command structure disruption occurs from the earliest times after the Orion perversion on this planet*. The disruption continues today. Acceptance and/or



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

tolerance of the gay/lesbian lifestyles, for example, is ONE indication of *that specific command structure failure*. Apparently that is the *weakest link* in the command.

*Polaric organizations*, like religion, structured 'society' and governments, are *arms* of the *Orion* or *rebel queens* (both are equally bad for Earthers). They not only fight among themselves but *against the Higher Selves*. They know they are losing on Earth and intend to do something MAJOR to stop this. The major idea is to create a new being on Earth and try another approach to their planetary control. This will not happen. Keep 2012 in mind. *It's not an artificial date* and a LOT will happen between now and then. Consider what I've told you here and see if you can deduce more. The old Chinese curse is really a blessing: May you live in interesting times. The times are *now*.

### The Source and the Root of the Problem

The DNA commands, instilled in Earth human bodies by the Orion Empire, cannot be undone by 'throwing a switch'. *They are in force to give the body dominance over the spirit*. According to the Orions, 'the only purpose of spirit is to animate the physical' and this is *to serve the Orion Empire and its queen*. This is the Source of the problem and start of the Game.

While this is the Source, the Root, formulated by the source, is *the creation of genders which trap the spirit into believing 'I am my body'*. The mutation delay, set by Orion, subjugates the life-giving male by the manipulative, controlling female, as it is in the Empire. The female gender has caused more problems and sadness than anything but religion. To be fair, if men had ignored their manipulations, it wouldn't have happened, but go back to the Source and the Root. In my own life, ALL interpersonal problems have been either directly because of females or men under the control of females. If the female isn't convinced she is in control and manipulating the male(s) in her life...and any other male(s) she chooses, she will make life miserable.

Remember, diamonds are a girl's best friend - the costly and the inanimate. Everything else is strictly for her amusement. That this exists is one thing. That males allow themselves to be thusly deceived/controlled is their fault. I've already covered much of this in previous messages.

As the spirit *matures*, it begins to *exert itself* over the physical. The physical does not give in easily. The *prime lie* of the physical is 'you are not whole unless you live with the opposite gender'. This denies the true nature of the spirit, which is *both* male and female. However, it does show how the physical was divided by the Empire and how it seeks to return to its perfect state. This CANNOT occur by living with the opposite gender for the Empire also installed codes that cause conflict and the desire for females to rule in their physical. This body-oriented *lack of wholeness attitude* forces the body-controlled physicals to live with a non-compatible *opposite gender* and *endure a life of conflict* to appease the alien DNA commands. The succubistic nature of the female body harms the male and drains him of years, among other things. The male's ability to give life frustrates the female who can't and causes her to become a shrew if he won't obey or amuse her.

As spirits mature, they feel *restless* with the status quo. Interests *contrary to routine* begin to peak their interests. Curiosities about *other* beliefs, psychic and occult mysteries and studies and radical, non-conformist thoughts are all from *spirit trying to exert control over the physical*. Sexual experimentations with the same gender are also of the spirit. Like



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

needs like is spiritual. The 'need' for the opposite gender is purely a physical/Orion demand. Consider the Source and the Root.

The spirit will eventually reach a state of maturity when they realize *not* only do they not need the opposite gender to live with, but also will *act* on it. Hence, *women who leave husbands/boyfriends to be with another woman* and *men leaving wives/girlfriends to be with another man*. This is increasing. Many times this occurs *before* the spirit is mature. This is when the DNA command is shorted out by genetics as well as usually when someone is born into a homosexual body.

It takes *courage* and *maturity* for the spirit to control the body and break convention. You are still short of total spiritual control *if* your physical still exerts the 'gotta be with the opposite gender' command that your spirit isn't strong enough to override. You are where you are in your individual progression. Eventually you will succeed. The validity of these insights I share with you will be made known to you by your Higher Self at the right time for you.

**Observation: Can we 'save' ourselves?**

The *X-Files* series finale was tonight and it was excellent. The central theme was shown in the opening with 'End Game' and 'December 22, 2012' as the date of End-Game. There are 2 items I want to touch on about the show. The date they use in the opening IS the date from the Mayan calendar. Near the end of the episode, it was revealed that, "The Mayans were so frightened by the truth that they ended their calendar with that date".

The core truth, according to *X-Files* is that the date is the date of the final alien invasion of Earth and the end of Earther humans. This COULD be ONE possible end of End-Game. I say this because *End-Game does NOT mean the end of the Game, but rather the end of Earther Higher Self participation IN the Game as Earther Higher Selves move on to the next level.*

This is a snowball type end that keeps getting more and more severe. The December 22, 2012 (winter solstice) is considered the LAST day. It is also said that if you're lucky, you will have departed the scene before then. Mulder also believes that the Game is controlled by a small group of people here on Earth. This is SO narrow-minded. The Game is controlled by something FAR greater than a group of people here, or the Orion Empire as a whole, for that matter. Mulder couldn't accept the nature of the Game at the level he is at.

This brings up the second point I want to touch on. Mulder says, at the end, that he's not giving up hope that we can 'save' ourselves from the Event. This is the BODY talking. There is NO WAY that the real you, the incarnating spirit, will NOT be safe. The body, on the other hand, is only a *vehicle* for the spirit. You CANNOT save the body *nor do you need to*. It's the BODY that is speaking when you hear this stuff. The BODY fears death because it is the end of the body forever. I have discussed this before in the M5 materials as well.

I was asked if someone is caught in a nuclear explosion, is the spirit harmed in any way. The Higher Self is omnipotent and eternal. The Higher Self is also shim's extensions into shim's incarnational choices. IF there is a nuclear event (as when the US nuked Japan), *the Higher Self withdraws the incarnating spirit extension less than a hair before the explosion*. Knowing this, the bodies are dead a nano-second before the blast. Trust in your Higher Self, I keep saying. The REAL you will not be harmed. The empty shell is left to the ruins of the



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

blast. It doesn't matter. It serves its purpose for the Higher Self. Concern over the body, the children and similar are concerns of the body ONLY. When you hear these concerns, you hear the body override the spirit. An immature spirit, as I've said before, is along for the ride in many of your incarnations. I look forward to the upcoming Endgame. It will be wonderful, from my perspective, and there is NOTHING to fear

**Body ID & the End of the Earther Human Race**

A *Stargate SG-1* episode is being rerun on TV now. In this episode, taking place in 2010, the Ahshinn aliens have given Earthers everything they need to live more than in style. All planetary problems have ended and the Goa'uld fear the Ahshinn Federation. The aliens have extended human incarnational life to 200 years. Then Carter, mid-level female, discovers she cannot become pregnant and that the life extending serums contain sterilization components. The Earther human race will end within 200 years. Crisis, crisis, panic!!!

This is SO body ID'd. The 'I am my body' incarnates run around in panic. It's like watching a car (body) drive in circles while the driver (spirit) sits and does nothing. The body FEARS *death and the lack of breeding*. These are alien DNA commands of prime directives to the body. The body is LOADED with fears, as I've said before. Yes, these are *experiences* but they are experiences to *overcome*. IF people were spirit oriented and the incarnation was in control of the body, the end of the Earther human existence would mean *nothing* since *nothing is ever 'lost'*. You may not totally grasp this until your Awakened Final Incarnation, possibly in VERY Advanced incarnations preceding the Final. *You will learn there is NO weeping and wailing over the end of human life.*

Yes, the Game would like you to believe you are 'only human'. Yes, the aliens would like you to believe you are 'only human'. Yes, the rulers of Earth & their lackies would like you to believe you are 'only human'...BUT YOU ARE ANYTHING BUT HUMAN! This is a very Advanced concept for all to come to grips with, and you MUST do so in order to advance into higher than 4th density realms.

The drive to push the fear of body death is SO strong at this time due to so many Higher Self incarnations progressing AND due to the End of the Game on 3rd density Earth almost here. If you cannot handle this message, push it to the side, as I've said with all of my M5 materials. You WILL be ready at some time in your incarnational path. I guarantee it.







*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

---

---

*Death of The Third Density Physical Vehicle*

---

---

**Death Related Myths**  
(Special Gold Edition Segment)

"I don't believe there's anything after death": This is a popular myth among extreme body oriented people. The body and the body's life is everything to them, hence they will do anything they can to prolong the body's life. This is irregardless of the fact that their Higher Self chose the date/manner of death before the incarnation. The 'no life after death' person has subdued the spirit so that shim is along for the experience of spiritual denial. Each incarnation does have only one life as that incarnation. Once the body dies, that incarnation will *never* be alive in the physical again. This is the body's greatest fear. Matrix 5 readers know that even though the body is dead and gone, ALL the experiences live on in that person's Higher Self. This makes these experiences immortal since they are contained in the real you. I have met a few of these 'nothing after death' people. You can't get anywhere with them, but listening to their body talk can be an interesting observation in body control.

The 'nothing after death' deceptions originate with the sequential path beings. After all, it was the sequential aliens who installed those miserable DNA commands when they split Ancient Earthers into two genders. The Orion queen is fanatical about not dying. Cloning and life extension drugs abound in the Orion Empire because they do not want their part in the Game to end. This is a 3rd density addictive behavior and does retard spiritual growth. The symbol of the phoenix - physical rebirth - is Orion. It was also the symbol of the Chinese empress and others.

One of the purposes for the existence of religion and its control on Earth was for those incarnates, who aren't fooled by the 'no life after death' mantra, is to keep a fear of god (alien personality masquerade) who will get you after death if you don't obey. They want to get you coming or going. This is to enhance the Game's traps and dead ends for simultaneous incarnates.

When the 'no life beyond death' mode infects a simultaneous incarnation, it will only be for one or two incarnations FOR THE EXPERIENCE WITHOUT THE ADDICTION. This is because of the nature of simultaneous incarnating. We are experiencing a multitude of vastly different experiences at one 'time'. We will be long gone while the reptilians are still struggling with physical immortality. They were doing so when we chose the simultaneous path. We will have come and gone and they haven't even progressed at all. See how tediously slow the sequential path is!

Body ID'd people love the phrases 'the gift of life' and 'all life is sacred'. These are Orion concepts, except they don't examine the intent when used by the Orion Empire. "The gift of life" is a reference to the Orion queen being able to clone and extend her life. The queen is mother. The queen IS the Empire. See how that is mirrored in Earther royalty? Royals talking in the 'we' mode, for example. The average Orion reptilian is not given this 'luxury'.

'All life is sacred' is an Orion concept as well since they consider that all life (under their jurisdiction) belongs to the queen and is hers to use as she sees fit. Refer back to old England where all life on the king's preserve belonged to him, thus was, in a way, 'sacred' to



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

him. It also warns away other non-Orions that they risk the wrath of the queen if they mess with her 'sacred life'.

Very Advanced and higher incarnates know that life isn't sacred. Life worship is contrary to spirit immortality. We learn, by experience and progression, that it is only the spirit that counts and the physical is no more than a temporary vehicle for the spirit. The personality of the incarnation (philosopher, prostitute, peasant or mayor) is only the *temporary* role for the Higher Self to experience and grow from.

### **Choices and Death**

*Before you incarnate, you choose a variety of items, from gender to method of death.*

First incarnations are very, VERY basic - I want to be 'born here', for example. You choose a *random experience* based on the location you desire. Next you may wish to choose the other gender. *With progressive incarnations, the spirit matures and the list of experiences is modified and enlarged.* By the time you reach Advanced incarnations, the item list is long. This is based on past incarnational experiences and experiences you still wish to have.

One item that will start probably in mid-lower incarnations is choosing the manner of death. After randomly experiencing various methods of death, the spirit begins to realize *shim can choose whatever method shim wants.* Just remember that *the Higher Self will require a huge amount of variety in death of the body for the experiences.* This is everything from violent to peaceful. This includes infant death to suicide to old age as well. There is NO such thing, in the spirit realms, as 'death before your time'.

YOU CANNOT DIE BEFORE YOUR TIME. You can be some extremely fit body type and get killed by a bus or simply drop dead. You can be a smoker, like George Burns, and live to be quite old. It's ALL *experience.* The wail and moan over death is strictly of the body, for the body knows that that particular body will never live again. It served its purpose, so the spirit has moved on.

Most of us have known people claiming to be a death's door, but seem to be hanging around for decades. YOU CANNOT DIE BEFORE YOUR TIME...and YOU set the time and method before you were born!

*Suicide*, the big 'how dare you' of the alien masters and their religious flunkies, is another *experience.* I was asked to check on a suicide in the astral. When I saw him, I told him, "You look pretty good for a dead guy". That spirit had learned many valuable experiences and has since moved on. Suicide is NOT tragic to the spirit It's just another *experience.*

The mythologies of 'heaven' and 'hell' are strictly *polarity inventions* with mythic heaven for the Light siders and mythic hell for the Dark siders, according to the Light side, of course. *These places do not exist outside the minds of those who wish it, and it is real to them ONLY as long as they continue to believe in it.* Death is nothing to be feared. It is the release the spirit gladly accepts to be free of this classroom. Death is a graduation of the spirit and should be celebrated as such.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**More on Choices and Death**

Since the Higher Self *chose* the manner of death, after *maturing* enough to realize it *can*, when the individual incarnation's time to end nears, there is no healer, psychic, doctor or herbalist who can halt or change this decision. In any situation where the person is healed from seemingly life threatening situations, this is proof of an experience. *When the body dies, it is proof that the Higher Self has experienced all shim required from that physical incarnation* and is progressing onward. Death is what the body fears most because death of the body is forever. However *all the individual incarnation experiences are forever* as is the spirit that gave that body life. You are eternal, the physical incarnation is temporary. Once you realize you are not your body, death of the body is insignificant especially when you realize that YOU chose the manner and time of the death experience.

**Body Identification and Fear of Death**

News spots, commercials and talk shows all wailing about cholesterol, fat content, salt and so on *attempting to control what you think* of your current incarnation. This is working with overwhelming success. This is also another *control* element of the Game.

One of the choices you made, before your current (or any) incarnation, is how you will die. The manner of death chosen is due to the Higher Self's need for different death experiences. The deaths chosen range from old age to suicide to prime of life and everything in-between. There is no such thing, as I've said before, of dying before one's time.

You find perfect physical specimens being killed by a car or bus. You know of people who always seem to be sick, but outlive healthy people. There's the jogger who dies while jogging. On and on the examples go. When it's your CHOSEN time to die, you WILL die and cannot change what you set into motion. You WILL accomplish *everything you wanted to do* before you incarnated. You can even choose an incarnation that dies shortly after birth JUST for the *experience* of it. The *only limitations* are those you set. *You cannot change your mind once incarnated.* However you will be able to better tune your 'next' incarnation because of what you've discovered in the current one.

NOTHING, and I mean NOTHING, can stop you from exiting when it's your time. Not all the doctors, homeopaths, shamans or anyone. If your time hasn't arrived, you will be seen past a 'crisis' and will have learned from it, but you didn't die because it wasn't your time.

So all this drum beating about cholesterol, fat in foods, etc., is *an attempt to get you to give away your power to the medical segments of society*, to get you to *conform to what others think you should be doing* and to *get you to obey*. One well known saying is "I'd rather die fat and happy than skinny and denying the pleasures of life". *You're here for experiences and to enjoy, as best you can, your incarnation.* Those who control the Game want to ensure that you *produce* (in the Orion fashion), *give away your power* to those who wish to rule you (government, medical professions, peers, etc), and *live a life of fear of something that cannot be changed* - death.

The fear of death is purely a body thing. The body fears death, as the body will have this one life only. Whereas the spirit animating that body has many, many lives. When the spirit is immature OR minion, the body's DNA commands rule. The fear of death...the 'I'll do anything to extend this life' attitude...is body centric. VERY Advanced and awakened Final



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

incarnations are not so controlled. Death, for these spirits, is *just another experience* and there's also the *longing to return to full memory and get on with other experiences*, especially with Final Incarnations.

Homeopathy and herbals are the best for your system as they work *with* your immune system. Allopathic medicines will *ruin* your immune system. However the choices are yours based on *pre-incarnational decisions*. You should never be *forced* into a certain path. Keep your power, for you cannot 'graduate' from 3rd density unless you do. Let the others wail and moan over death. The Awakened know better. You do better to read labels for chemical content than fat, etc. The chemicals will get you in far worse condition than the natural substances. *Enjoy your life and damn the rest.*

**You Just 'Dropped Dead' – Now What?**

Yeah, you just dropped dead/kicked the bucket or whatever, but your physical body is no longer working. You can choose to hang around and watch those you know, but unless you're a low to mid-level incarnation, you will get bored with that quickly. Notice how the spirits that John Edward, on his Sci-Fi channel show and is a medium for, are still concerned with every day Earth life? Beings who *Matrix V* is geared for will never visit John Edward, or someone similar, once the body is dead.

Once you're satisfied, after death, get yourself up to Monroe level 27. If you cannot do it yourself, someone will assist you strictly because you desire it. You can spend as long as you like here. As I've said earlier, the Library is huge and will be invaluable for you, as are the Healing Center and the Planning Center. What you may choose to do, on 27, is create a residence. This is easily accomplished just by visualizing it. I have a home there. I know others who have residences ranging from a castle to a lily pad. The interior and exterior are to your design and you can alter whatever *at will*.

Once you die, time, as you've known it, no longer exists. *Your own limits are your only limitations* in *what you can do* or *where you can go*. Unless you are a moderately Advanced, Dominant or Final Incarnation, your desires for higher knowledge are limited. Remember, all experiences are stored within your Higher Self, and this applies to ALL incarnations.

When you've had enough as *that* individual incarnation, the energy of that incarnation will be absorbed into the Higher Self. You do not 'end existence', but rather, like clothing you no longer desire to wear, *the incarnation you've just finished becomes a memory, totally intact, but a memory nevertheless, and you move on to new and greater experiences.*

**Death & The Higher Self**

There is so much hand-wringing over the subject of death that I will give some more information on this topic. Death and the fear of death are both BODY concerns. Remember, until you have become quite Advanced spiritually, the body will rule the spirit making the spirit basically 'along for the ride'. The body fears death more than any other single event that it can and will face. This is the basis for the misleading statement of 'you only have one life' - yes, the BODY only has one life, but YOU have hundreds and hundreds in that many different bodies, ALL of which die.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

The Game is vast with a myriad of rules. I have discussed many of these rules in the Matrix 5 materials but that even pales to how many there are. The Game requires the Higher Self to choose the manner of physical body death for each of shim's incarnations BEFORE they incarnate. Just as in *Dungeons & Dragons* or any other role playing game, you choose your character and the traits that character has, likewise you also do so for *each* of your incarnations.

The Higher Self will choose a *wide variety* of deaths to experience since *experience* is the bottom line of 3rd density incarnations. You *will* experience deaths through disease, accident, violence and old age - just to name a few. In my own experiences, one incarnation was stabbed during the Roman Empire, another drowned and there was a variety of other gruesome deaths of the bodies. These deaths are all saved within the Higher Self just as all other *experiences* you have via your physical incarnations. *The information will be needed further up in your progression.*

Death is one of the 'sacred' topics with Earthers lacking in Very Advanced development. Jokes about death are considered in poor taste by these people. This, of course, is body ID horseshit! Remember *nothing* is sacred and death is fear based. Earthers will try all kinds of methods/doctors to attempt to extend their physical existence, yet the jock in great shape gets run over by a car and the woman who is religious in everything she eats dies of brain cancer. The examples are numerous. What is going on is that no matter what you do or don't do, *the date and the manner of death was set by your Higher Self (thus YOU) before you were born.*

The desire to 'defeat death' is mainly an Orion Empire hallmark. The Orion queen and close royals use life extending drugs (the prime one is pronounced 'sma') and *cloning*. With *cloning*, they seek to instantly transfer the queen's spirit from the old body into a cloned duplicate. The draining of others' life forces to extend one's own is a well known story on Earth. Vampires and other types of energy stealing (such as in Disney's *Hocus Pocus*) are examples of these attempts to forestall death of the body by making others existence shorter. *This originated with the sequential incarnates* and was introduced on Earth by aliens living here. *Reptilians on Earth engage in these activities with most of the so called 'missing persons' and the governments know this.* These ideas, while interesting to hear, can sidetrack an Earther Higher Self if not Advanced enough because they introduce *fear* into their *belief system* and introducing as much fear as possible is an Orion/Darkside & Lightside goal to control incarnates.

Body-ruled people will reject the idea of Higher Selves choosing their own deaths/time and drag out that old chestnut, 'predetermination'. This idea is a feature of some protestant religions, but, again, it's warped. Those whose religion *believes* in predetermination say 'there is nothing one can do' so you just 'wander' through life. THAT is a Game trap: *the idea that someone is shoving a life path on you without your input.* However, NO ONE is forcing your Higher Self to do anything. It is YOUR Higher Self and ONLY your Higher Self who chooses your experiences and your Higher Self is the real you. You *must* be able to grasp that *if* the Matrix 5 materials are to be of assistance to *you* on *your* path. You WILL know (not believe) that by the time you become your Awakened Final Incarnation.

Your body cannot change its manner/time of death. ANY thoughts to that area are strictly body/immature spirit generated. NO ONE can promise and deliver to change that. You cannot 'sell your soul' to a fictitious 'devil' to do so (this topic was covered in previous M5 material). You will understand this topic on death fully *when it is time for you.* In most



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

*cases of death, the spirit has already separated from the body before it physically dies.* You will hear how someone 'rallied' just before death to impart some message to those in attendance. The 'rally' is when the spirit briefly re-enters the dying body to give a message.

The body still lives, even when the spirit is elsewhere (as in coma) due to the energy stream from the Higher Self still passing through the body. This is the same thing that keeps the body alive when one sleeps or astral travels. Sleep has also been referred to as the 'small death' as the spirit always leaves the body when it sleeps. The spirit can never die. The body definitely will. When you read this, it will activate certain DNA commands within you in regard to the body being the omega of concerns. This is a *lie* that wasn't present with Ancient Earthers. This is a *lie* that all Higher Selves know as *part of the Game*. Death is *nothing to fear* for a spirit-in-control person as it frees you from the bonds of 3rd density and permits you to *be* so much more.

**Observations: Deceptions - "Do this so you will live longer"**

The media today is SO full of do this/don't do that so you can 'live longer'. This is a facet of the Game, so be warned. Your Higher Self, just as shim chose birth circumstances, also chose death circumstances for EACH incarnation. There is NO circumventing of this by the incarnation especially as the Higher Self knew the body's survival instinct is high and will overrule all except the most Advanced and the Final incarnations. There is NO 'contract' with your Higher Self, as some seem to believe, since the Higher Self IS you out of the costumes of the incarnations.

The reason for death is the true final 3rd density experience for that incarnation. This is why Joe Jock can die while playing sports, why Debbie Diet can die in a car accident and why Harvey & Helen Health-Nuts died on 9/11. That there is SO much wailing over the death of the physical definitely shows body control heavily over spiritual. Today, on TV, the hospital nurse tells people not to eat 'comfort foods' except sparingly during the holidays, so you can 'live longer'. PURE BULLSHIT. They aren't called 'comfort foods' for nothing, you know.

Unfortunately, you don't come to the realization of the tremendous power your Higher Self has until you are at the end of the incarnational cycle. Therefore, people who *believe* the medical garbage in the media have *chosen* those experiences. If they have *chosen* those *experiences*, the Higher Self will *allow them* so long as they don't interfere with that individual incarnation's Plan. You cannot cheat your death time by being 'in shape' or the Orion Empire's 'ideal weight'. The example I like to use is George Burns living to 99 while drinking and smoking his whole adult life, yet how many buff bods died on 9/11 or in an accident? Consult with YOUR Higher Self for more on this, but I thought it timely to bring this up with the warning crap on TV. My advice is to *enjoy what you can while you can and try not to die with regrets that you could have avoided*. Where's that cherry cheesecake??? Triple Ho's!



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**Polarity Activities on the Astral**

My writings have given you much information on the Game known as '3rd density Earth' and the manipulations of both Dark and Light polarities on Earthers (and beyond). So, now you just dropped dead. Are you now free of the troubles of Light and Dark? Nope. Both polarities are *very active* on the 4th density (astral). The lower 4th density is heavily populated by the Dark. You can run into the astral reptilians that David Icke refers to in his materials. You can also meet various Light polarities also. *Both sides continue to try to keep you from knowing who you really are.* They have a lot of success with low through early Advanced incarnations. These are those who haven't spiritually matured enough to see beyond 3rd density Earth and believe that 'once they've died, everything is ok'.

In an article that Val sent me, written by a student of the Monroe Institute, the last massive earthquake in India was investigated by some Lifelines graduates. The person describing the astral experience reported a tunnel that was rapidly moving the dead from where they were to where they are supposed to go. No tunnel experience of this nature has been reported by Robert Monroe or myself. Yet, here was one. Due to excessive minion incarnations in Asia, Africa and South/Central America, I am not all that surprised to hear of such a phenomenon. *The Earth Spirit is very anxious to have the minion incarnations on Earth returned to the group soul from whence they came.* They need to get on with their own incarnational paths in the nature realms. This tunnel was created to ease them back 'to where they belong'.

In the article, a couple of "Light beings" came around and told the Lifelines worker to send "Light" to these newly dead. Light side recruitment! As I previously told you, *white light is the polaric badge of the Light side.* These Light workers went so far to lift the Lifeline worker to be a beacon of Light and draw in these dead. They commented on those who 'wandered' away from the camps of the dead. Minion spirits do not 'wander'. Higher Self incarnations definitely may. The Light polarity, here, continues to try and 'save' people on the astral as they do on 3rd density Earth. What is also amazing is that these Lifeline graduates seem to so easily *obey what they're told* without question. You MUST question. *If they refuse questions, then they have an agenda* that may not be your cup of tea.

Non-minion dead from this event did go up to level 25, the *belief systems*, and the advanced dead moved up to level 27. MINION SPIRITS DO NOT MOVE TO THESE AREAS. These areas are STRICTLY for Higher Self incarnations. Minion dead can loiter on lower astral levels, but will eventually be reclaimed through the guidance of the Earth planetary spirit.

Meanwhile, the Dark is trying to cause intense *fear* in those who spent *too much time* close to the 3rd density after death. Visions of sufferings, false hells, the ghosts of haunted places, etc all generate powerful *fear vibrations* that these Dark entities *feed off of*. They particularly delight in causing fear to those still incarnate as the fear these people generate (both minion and Higher Self) does nothing but feed the beast, so to say. **IF THEY CANNOT CAUSE YOU TO FEAR, THEY WILL NOT STAY.** *Fear is the weapon of choice on the astral. Just by visualizing*, horrid creations can be instantaneously created for the sole purpose of instilling fear. Fear stifles your progress and MUST be overcome. *Knowing what can be concocted on the astral and that they can only cause fear IF you let them, will allow you to deal with these irritants which are easily dispelled with confidence.*



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

There are Dark and Light polarities on level 25 on the Monroe system of the 4th density. These you can readily investigate, if so interested. The religions that were/are active on Earth are all represented on level 25. The christian 'heaven' is next to the 'sacred' places of other religions, but *each is unable to sense the other*, so wrapped up in their illusions are they. All these are *stages of growth* for the Higher Selves. Both extremes of polarities can wind up here, from Hitler, Stalin and the popes to 'mother' Theresa and princess Diana. They all have their Higher Selves who, with maturity, will be able to recall these incarnations back within themselves.

In these areas, both polarities try to *reinforce* their way among their *adherents*. This information is gathered by the Higher Self incarnations as just another experience. By the time the individual Higher Self reaches upper Advanced and, definitely, Awakened Final incarnations, the less influence do the polarities have on them. This is a large part of the polarity dilemma - if they can't hang on to anyone beyond a certain level, how can they advance the polaric state into the higher densities? Even so, they won't give up.

Robert Monroe, in *Ultimate Journey*, talked of a large, glowing being who *demand*ed worship. This occurred on a level higher than 4th, where polarities still exist. This was a being of the Light polarity. When Monroe refused, the frustrated being moved off. Monroe held on to his power and so must you! *The vast number of experiences you have on 3rd density Earth prepare you for what is to come*. A large part of that is in *recognizing and dealing with polarities* you will run into on 4th density and beyond. It is the graduate of the Earther incarnational process that will be able to succeed far greater and with more ease than those Higher Selves who chose safer incarnational paths.

### **Belief System Centers On The Astral**

The 4th density (astral) has various levels to it. Monroe levels 27 and 34/35 have already been mentioned in other materials I've discussed. One of the most populated areas is level 26 - the belief systems.

Level 26 is the level of christian "heavens", oriental "nirvana", wiccan "groves", Greek "Elysian fields", Norse "Valhalla" and so on. Whatever kind of post-death promised land you can think of (and some you wouldn't believe) are all on level 26 and they are ready to receive the newly departed spirit believer. I have visited a few of these centers. The spirits who gravitate to level 26 are those who have formed beliefs of 'where they'll go once the body dies'. These levels are strictly of *group or personal beliefs* and not the higher learning centers of level 27.

In Monroe's books, he mentions escorting a spirit from the level of the recently dead. Bob intended to take this spirit to level 27, but the spirit vanished as they reached 26. Monroe found this happened several times. This demonstrates that the spirit cannot go to levels higher than shim is ready for. This is a self imposed limitation by the departed spirit.

One point that applies to *all* belief systems on 26 is that *they are totally unaware of any other area other than their own*. The wiccan "groves" are next to the area of catholic "heaven", etc. All exist *independent of each other*, of course, because *any afterlife not of the groups' belief is not in that groups' reality*.

The Greek area is especially beautiful . A huge, white temple with marble columns, is the central feature and, yes, you can interact with the Greek deities of old. Yes, the deities of



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

your favorite mythological preference exist in the center of your choice. See such mythical gods and goddesses as zeus, thor, isis, jesus, mary, kwan yin and countless others.

These 'deities' are nothing more than *astral creations formed by the energies of their worshippers through time*. They exist *only* because people continue to put *energies* into their form. While pagan deities are very active with their people, christian ones are not, due to the aloof attitude the followers have imbued their mythical deities. If you want to see an interesting effect, disguise yourself to look what the christians believe jesus or mary look like, add the dramatic touch of descending on a cloud, and watch how the spirits start to worship you. An interesting experiment.

The New Age center, instead of traditional deities, has "ascended masters", "councils of elders" and similar *judgment passing creations*. There are books in print that describe the New Age center. In this area of 26, which is LIGHT polarity, you have to deal with other residents, "peers", who either *approve or disapprove of your incarnational actions*. You better not be a suicide and wind up here. You may get punished by forcible incarnation on an uninhabited planet! Much of the New Age center seems very similar in structure to the film 'Defending Your Life', as that is one thing you do before the *judges*.

ALL belief structures on 26 are simply that, *belief structures*. We've all been to various of them, depending on incarnational beliefs and time periods. Once a belief system loses adherents, the images begin to fade with time. There are some former beliefs that have only tatters of disintegrating energy remaining.

The main point to be made here is that *all belief centers are artificial constructs that have control* (to varying degrees) and *conformity as rules*. In reality, there are no deities, elder councils or ascended masters who sit in judgment over you *unless YOU let them*. This is *why getting connected to your Higher Self is so important*. Once you are connected, you will pass over level 26 and go to the Advanced, non-deity, non-master area - level 27 - where *you* can interact with *your* Higher Self.

### **Astral Defenses and The Higher Self**

Last night I told Val about a soul retrieval that I did for a friend a couple of days ago. At one point, an astral entity, who had been engaged in harassing my friend, saw me and said, "Ah, someone else for me to tamper with". This entity was generally adult human in shape and size except for 2 'S' shaped horns on his head above each ear. No sooner did he say that to me and I sheared off his horns. That caught him by surprise. I told the being that he's not to mess with my friend any more or I'd do more than that. Then I followed up giving him a couple zaps of energy to get him moving away. The entity was totally stunned by the outcome and was, obviously, not use to dealing with someone who wasn't in fear and knew astral self-defense.

There are ALL types of beings on the astral and above. Monroe describes some in his trilogy. I've seen many more than he's described. Some are very nice, some are neutral and some are unpleasant and even dangerous. I have been trained, as a shaman, on how to deal with the various types of beings on the astral. This training allowed me to be ready for part of my Higher Self's vast store of information on protection and defense. When Monroe did much of his exploring on the spirit levels, many times he had *an extension of his Higher Self* guiding him. When you are an Awakened Final, you do not require this, as you *are* the



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

omega of your 3rd density incarnations with greatest access to your Higher Self while still incarnated on 3rd density Earth.

It would be a Lightsider reaction to say 'ignore any astral being and they'll leave you alone'. It would be a Darksider reaction to spiritually nuke an astral being who you feel challenged by. The Balance reaction is a mix of both Dark and Light. If you are threatened, you use a demonstration of your abilities to cause the being to think twice before proceeding with a threat to you. Ignoring this type of entity encourages them to be bolder since they take it as a sign of weakness on your part. You would be perceived as a Lightsider. Balance uses *enough of a demonstration that causes the entity to stop*. If more of a demonstration was needed for a stubborn entity, that can easily be arranged. Some times it is necessary to return them to a pure energy state, *especially if they are created by someone's thought*.

Now as to how much energy and to what level to use it - Whenever I am confronted on the astral, I never hesitate on what to do. With the above example, I didn't pause and think about what was an appropriate action. I proceeded with the action quicker than Samantha could twitch her nose. This is when the pure energy of the Higher Self with all shim's knowledge and experiences comes to call. The Higher Self would never allow the Awakened Final to be bullied on the astral. You really have no idea of the enormity of *abilities* that is found within your Higher Self.

The *only* limitations are ones you *imagine*. *If you have to hesitate and try to reason what to do in that type of a situation, first of all, you shouldn't be confronting astrals* or you can have an experience that could even kill your physical body.

Second, *if you have to stop and think*, you are not an Awakened Final as this level is the purist extension of the Higher Self outside the Higher Self's being.

Third, *you cannot bluff on the astral*. Your *aura* reveals the truth about you. This brings to mind the lesson in the bible (yes, you can adapt one or two things from that book) where some men saw demons possessing someone else. These guys said, 'we saw (non-existent) jesus and paul (I think) cast out demons, so we can too'. They used the words that they saw as effective, but the demons said, 'we know jesus and we know paul (or whoever it was), but we don't know you'. The words, *without the ability*, meant nothing. They proceeded to beat the hell out of these guys. The same holds true on the astral but in different form. The name 'jesus' has no power on those levels. However if you try to ACT like you have power/training that you *don't*, the being would *see* you are bluffing and proceed to have their way with you *if for no other reason than to teach you a lesson*.

The astral and other spirit beings are *not to be fooled with trivially*. Remember polarities exist up through the next few densities. You must act *responsibly*. You can learn some astral lessons on Monroe level 27, but *the vast amount of higher density lessons wait for you AFTER your Final Incarnation has summoned all of your Higher Self's incarnations back home and you progress upward*. The invaluable lessons you learn on the 3rd density *will* translate to the spirit realms.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**Observations: Ghosts - New Information**

Ghosts seem to be significant on TV these days. Some depict ghosts in civil war areas, some on ships, some in haunted areas, etc. While these can be interesting programs, they are NOT all ghosts. When you see what appears to be a ghost and this spirit is doing a *routine function or a repeating task*, this is NOT a ghost but rather *you are seeing into another time period where that person (not ghost) is moving about doing things common to that person*. That this person is always seen doing the same function indicates *that is where the fracture in 'time' is occurring* and it makes the viewer think the event is 'repeating', while it is simply *the same event being viewed over and over*.

When you go into a known haunted area and ghosts are making noise, creating lights, moving items and similar, those are true ghosts or *lowest 4th density beings*. These are trying to *get your attention or frighten* you. The difference between a ghost and seeing into another time period is that *the ghost notices you but the other time period person does not*. This is why there could be a repeating scene of a woman carrying a tray down a flight of stairs or civil war soldiers shooting. *There is an anomaly in the illusionary fabric of 'time' that is allowing you to see this*. Linear time is an illusion and ALL our incarnations are doing their things at the same 'time'. This is a VERY Advanced concept.

Viewing another time period is a *one-way event* that seems to have begun in the 20th century and is *increasing in frequency*. This ability was extremely rare in earlier centuries.

There are LOTS of stories of so-called ghosts who are really quite alive in their time, but being viewed from our time as a 'vision'. The conductor who is seen every night waving his lantern by a railroad track, the civil or revolutionary soldier who is always seen loading his rifle, the woman who is spotted in 18th century garb and goes from room to room checking - all of these are examples of *time visions*. These people do NOT notice us in our time because they are alive in their period. They are unable to communicate to or even *to see* the viewers. IF they were able to see us, they would think that WE are the ghosts.

Yet, with true ghosts, they DO notice you and DO try to get your attention. These can be recently dead or family dead who want to hang around for whatever reason. They can also be of the lowest 4th density beings who want to feed off the fear of the living by scaring them. So, when you watch those shows on TV or read about them, remember what I've told you hear and understand with this new knowledge. It WILL make a difference.

**Simultaneous Incarnation Overlaps & Ghosts (revisited)**

(Special Gold Edition Segment)

Do you notice how some people are really hung up on certain *periods* of history or historical *locations*? There's the man who is wrapped up in the American Civil War to such a degree that he seems to be concerned with that as much as he is concerned with the present day. Then there's a woman who is totally surrounded by the colonial period and entering her home you could swear you stepped back in history by 250 years. A World War II buff, born after that event, who is fascinated by the period or a certain segment of that period (Japanese, German, etc), and all spare time is used in collecting items from that period or delving into facts of the period.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

These are just a few examples of something *not* uncommon among the simultaneously incarnating. *Remember, since all incarnations are occurring at the same time AND your Higher Self is currently processing information from EACH of these numerous incarnations, there can be a certain amount of one incarnation's vibration into another provided that the incarnation is having strong experiences.* You are not likely to have a peasant incarnation in the Dark Ages filter into your 21st century incarnation because the peasant incarnation would not be a significant one. However, your love of Roman artifacts or 18th century furniture does indicate something significant about the incarnation of that time to transfer that interest into your 21st century self. *Deja vu* is the term commonly used when this *incarnational vibration* occurs.

The same can be said for the immersing in ancient Greek culture by some in the 18th century or the Atlantean cravings of others. These are *energy transfers*. This is easier to observe when dealing with 'past' time periods than 'future' periods due to an *easy link* to the past, post-Atlantean worlds, via *books, tv, etc.* If you are having a significant incarnation now, depending on where you are and how it is significant, a taste of that can slip into one of your Advanced level incarnations of the time 'past'. Advanced incarnations are more equipped to handle the revelations. *This can show as interests in things that do not yet exist.* The revolutionary, the bohemian and those out of step with the current norm *may* all be having this happen to them. It can be unsettling to contemporaries as it encourages *change* and *exploration*.

As I have mentioned in an earlier segment, what people think are ghosts, in most cases, are just visions into other time periods, a *rift in the fabric of time phases* that allows you today to see something occurring simultaneously in the 'past'. Battlefields are common *time rifts*, where ghosts of seemingly old battles are fighting. This is *not* a 'repeat of an old performance', but a look through a *hole* in time. These participants do not interact with you and, if they saw you, they would assume that YOU are the ghost in strange clothing. In actuality the 'ghosts' are very much alive in their time period. A genuine 'ghost' would be someone who has died and interacts with the physical incarnate.

The vibrations we call 'time' are *not* difficult to pass through. Our Higher Selves are constantly involved in *all* time periods that *shim* has an incarnation. *These incarnations are just as alive as we are now.* If you were to astral time travel, anyone, from that year you chose to visit, who saw you would call you a 'ghost'. When I went to the year 1600, the Native Americans who saw me believed I was a spirit being. It's all a matter of *perspective* in this illusion heavy Game.

**Game Over: The Moment Of Knowing**  
(Special Gold Edition Segment)

In earlier segments, I wrote about the end of an incarnation on the astral after physical death. There comes a point where the incarnation, on the astral, remembers who *shim* is and, with a flash of "ah-ha", that incarnation disappears from the astral and returns to their Higher Self. This occurs when that Higher Self's Final Incarnation summons in all simultaneous incarnations and removes *shimself* from the Game. The "ah-ha" comes when full memory is restored to the astral segments of that Higher Self, just moments before the now whole Higher Self leaves for other densities.

The reason why a Higher Self does not hang around with incarnations truly aware is because the second stage of the Game on 3rd density Earth is being played out on the astral



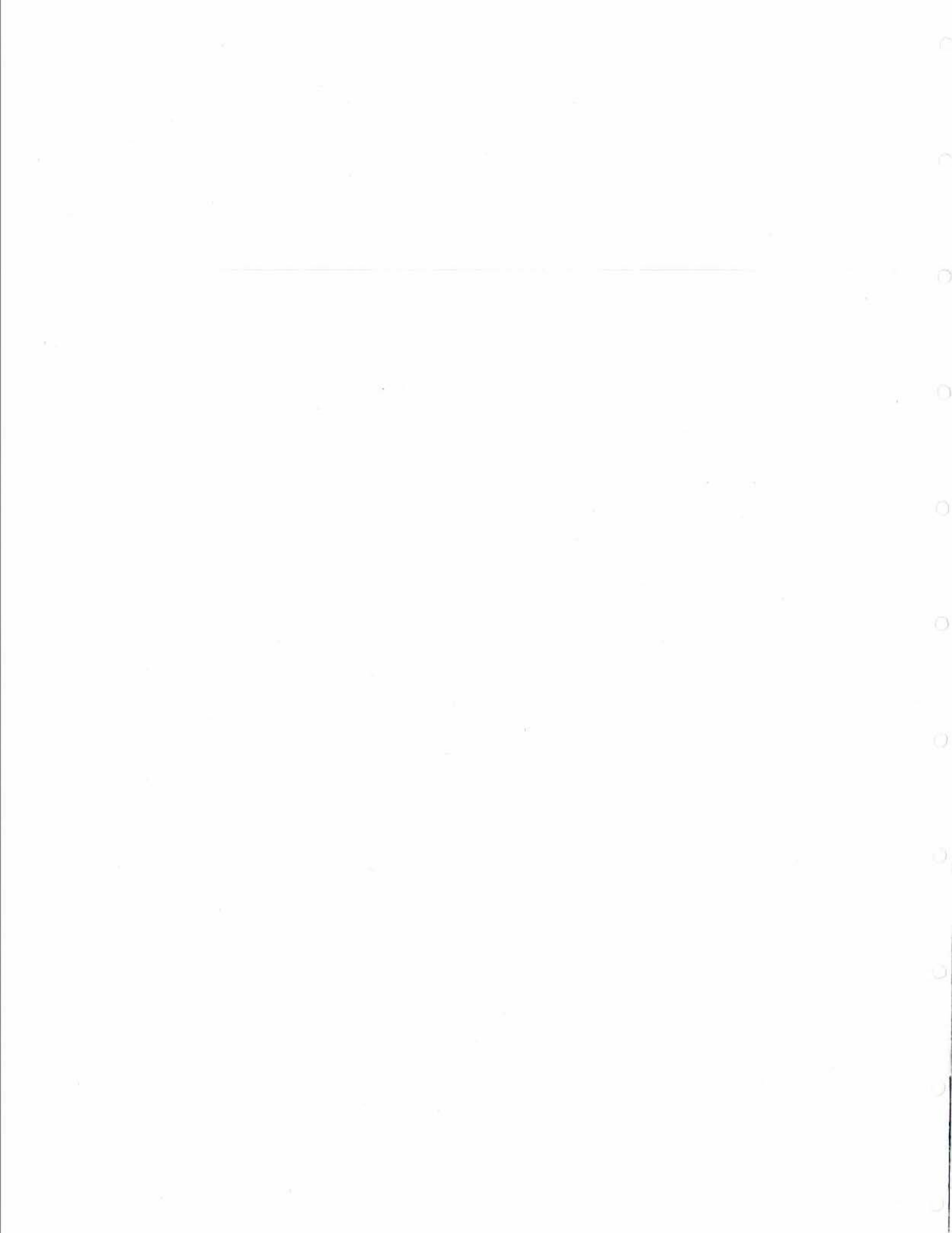
*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

4th density. This is why much of the astral is a reflection of the physical. Fully aware Higher Self incarnations of the simultaneous path, other than a Final Incarnation, would know far too much to play the Game as per its rules. Polarity becomes severely threatened and has to submit to Balance if this were to happen. This is contrary to the Game. Hence, when a Higher Self has completed the simultaneous path via shim's Final Incarnation, this manifestation, when ready, summons all that Higher Self's incarnational streams back within through the Nexus of Time. When the summons is given, the filters and blocks of each incarnation are removed. The glow of 'knowing' fills each incarnation as they meld back into the Higher Self. They remove their 'costumes' of the Game, become one with the Final Incarnation and proceed to new experiences and challenges outside of the 3rd density Game.

I did a shamanic technique on a suicide case a few years back at the request of the father of this man. I told the recently deceased about the Library on 27 where he can find the answers that he needs. Some months after that, the spirit of the suicide case appeared briefly in my living room to tell me to tell his father that "wait until he discovers what I found out". The spirit was really overjoyed and, after delivering his message, he vanished from the astral. I am revealing in this Gold Edition what happened to him. This will happen to all incarnations of your Higher Self under direction of the Final Incarnation. THAT will be an absolutely *wonderful* , *liberating* moment when it occurs to us.







---

---

## *Third Density Cultural Programming: Observations*

---

---

### **Observation: Fear as the Root of Most Problems**

Why do people *remain* in bad situations? Why are people, with sane curiosities, unable to *take* the experience? When I approach someone I've been observing with these types of questions, *they almost always will avoid answering them with the truth*. Oh, they'll tell me all kinds of fluff and sparkle, but *rarely* the truth.

One example: I don't know how many times I've heard or been told that male A is "just curious" about gays and gay life while being married to a female. Almost all of the men I've done the pleasure dance with have been married with kids. Does your wife know? Of course not, she has no idea. Why are you married *if* you prefer being with a man? This one has them pause, mumble some nonsense usually about *others' expectations of them*, and so on. So, you're living your life *for someone else* then? "I'm just curious", they say. I bet you are, but curious does *not* mean visiting me every Thursday when your wife is at adult evening classes. That was in the 80's, by the way. Yes, society and alien DNA commands *put* you in that prison, but only YOU have the *key* to that cell and the key is YOU. THEY don't want you to know that you ARE the key!

Another example is someone (male or female) who lives the lie of a marriage with someone they are incompatible with. We ALL know people like that. Like one of my friends said to me recently, "In that case, what's the point?". Very true. When quizzed about this, the lamest excuse is 'for the kids', but fingers will point all over the place. I can tell you that the worst reason to stay together is 'for the kids'. Kids notice EVERYTHING and *it does them more harm to grow up in a hostile home* than any other single reason. Not only that, *both people are being unfair to themselves and each other by allowing it to continue*. Again, the key to this cell is YOU.

These 2 examples (and you can think of many more yourself) have a common root *reason* for existing - FEAR. Yeah, the Fear Tree has many poisoned *fruits* on them - such fruits as *others' expectations, financial, kids*, etc - and these people would prefer if you just *pick a fruit or two* and be satisfied while *watering the roots of the fear tree with tears of self-pity*. Removing the fruit does NOT deal with or end the problem. *The problem is the source of the fruits* - FEAR. Instead of watering the roots with tears, use your key to escape the situation.

Yes, alien DNA commands DO fit into the equation as well. All these byproducts of the Fear Tree will *keep low and mid level incarnations in line* even much of the Advanced levels.

These are *learning experiences* for the incarnation. By *repetitive dips in this experience pool, the progressing spirit eventually recognizes the pattern, the experiential loop, and will also eventually break the cycle*. If the cycle wasn't broken, the spirit would never progress.

One cannot change this progressional cycle of the spirit. This is true, BUT *one can point out the fear factor to an incarnation* and, depending on the level of progression, the spirit *may*



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

get that needed spark and start to end the loop, even if not until another incarnation. The tricky part here is NOT to try and *force* the matter. *It would simply be to make the comment, answer any questions if they ask and let it go.* That's the Law of Allowance. You allow them to make their own mistakes even after you give your best advice. *They will learn FAR more if they experience the pain of their decisions and the consequences of these decisions.*

The thing is that IF they are in *pain*, they can *alter their path by making new decisions* provided *they can overcome their own fears*. Remember THEY have to do this. Don't nag them. Be their friend *even if they don't make the decisions you would.* We are ALL at different levels of progression. The Law of Allowance is quite simple, but you won't be able to recognize/handle it *properly* until you reach Awakened Final Incarnation for your Higher Self.

This brings another point in mind. Balance is NOT neutrality. *Neutrality is lack of Balance and stagnation.* Balance is quite *active*. Think on this, but don't fault yourself if you can't quite grasp what I've said. You WILL when it is YOUR time.

**Observation: Fear and Manipulation**

The 'bottom line' purpose of incarnating in 3rd density is *experience* and *what we learn from all the experiences* we have via *all our incarnations*. We are now in the EndGame years and there are more *varieties* of experiences today than any other time since Atlantis was destroyed. On the other hand, there are those who seek to *deny you experiences* hoping that by denying you what you are here for, that 'EndGame will be extended and postponed'.

Here's a review of *some* of those who attempt to stop EndGame from occurring:

**\*Governments** - The purpose of government has become the erection of fences to severely restrict potential experiences. An example is in California, medical marijuana use is legal. In US federal law it isn't. So federal goons are currently overriding state laws, not for the good of anyone, but to restrict. Governments have been regulating countries based on the dominant religion of the country. We know what religion is and more will be said below. Governments have been the enforcement group for religion by making mythological philosophies enforceable on non-believers. Sexual restrictions are all religious based and tainted by the alien restrictions dealing with matters of procreation. Laws against gays, polygamy, etc all have their origins with religion. Governments should be minimally involved in people's lives and concerned with protection of the people from those who seek to do violence against them. Instead, the governments (on ALL levels) meet to figure out how to further restrict the population they control (note control, not serve). Government SHOULD be serving the people, not religion, not special interest groups and definitely not for the highest bidder. You also hear the power hoarders in Washington talk about "continuity of government" as being so damned important. Yeah, it's important to them, not to those who have Advanced beyond the need to be controlled. If EndGame brings about government collapse, good riddance! Also, the worst thing to do in that case, would be to attempt to re-establish the same government. Break that experiential loop. Governments are agents of the Game and the Dark polarity. Deception is their shroud and control their game. Idealistic, new politicians either fall to the Dark or are replaced or otherwise removed from the scene. Governments have become major players in restricting your experiences.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**\*Religion** - I have written several segments featuring religion and how it serves alien 'gods' and how it exists because of alien 'gods'. *Religion is sequential incarnate-oriented*, since the roots are with *aliens* and the *sequential incarnates*. There are some minor exceptions to this, but even in the minor exceptions, sequentially incarnating is still the cornerstone (the "you only have one life" bullshit). *You cannot control simultaneous incarnating Higher Selves due to the nature of the simultaneous experience.* You *DO* have control over sequentials to a certain extent, hence the *karma myth* ("in my/your next incarnations, you owe me"...). Sequentials are also born with their memory intact so you can chase down someone who 'did you wrong' when you've discovered where they were reborn. *This is what slows down progression* for the sequential path Higher Self. *They drag their baggage from one incarnation to another.* Now, that's fine for them as that's *their* path, but when they attempt to make *their* way OUR way, *they become agents for the Game.* Their beliefs form the core of Earther mainstream religions with basically 'everything for god' as the *theme*, which goes back to when the aliens genetically manipulated Earthers to serve them. The 10 Commandments are nothing but alien commandments meant for *Earther slaves* and not the aliens themselves. A whole book could be written on that topic alone. *Religion exists to limit your experiences and for you to surrender your power to an external being while keeping you ignorant of your Higher Self and true nature.*

**\*Medical Groups** - The medical organizations are very much *fear based information machines*. "If you do this, if you don't do that, cholesterol, fat, etc" (medical mantras)...**FEAR** that if you don't *obey*, you *may* not live to be 90, but may *die* at <gasp> 75. This is another *denier of simultaneous incarnates* and is truly body ID oriented. *Your Higher Self can have as many incarnations as shim desires.* There are NO restrictions on it. Also, the Higher Self sets the time and manner of death. Worrying about all the hand wringing, body oriented, fear based pronouncements of the medical establishment will NOT extend your life one second longer than your Higher Self has decided that it should be. This is why George Burns could live to 99 and smoke cigars and this is why the jock type who does everything the medicals want is hit by a bus at age 28. When one parrots cholesterol, fat or whatever medical fear, that's the body talking and NOT the spirit. These people also deny themselves pleasures they crave, thus experiences, because they *beLIEve*, for example, that 'fat is bad for you', meanwhile they drown themselves in *DIET* aspartame drinks and pop pills for control of every twitch the body may come up with. If you trust in your Higher Self, you act accordingly. If you allow your body to control you, yes, you gain that *experience*, but that incarnation is not in Very Advanced stages. One store owner I know said that she "fears high cholesterol because the doctor told her she could have a stroke and not be able to move". *Fear* is the weapon here. *Under the guise of 'we're here to help you', these groups actually exist to control you and deny you significant experiences by having you give away your power to them.*

There are *other* groups that you can add to these, but you get the general idea. *There are always groups or people who want you to give away your power to them for the purpose of controlling/manipulating YOU and denying YOU experiences that are not sanctioned by the polarities.* Waking up to *this* is one of the *goals* of your incarnations. This is followed up by realizing *you don't need* these groups/people as *you are whole within yourself* and that *they exist to build fences around you to keep you in a box of their creating.* Until you can break free of these so-called authority figures/groups, you are still significantly Game bound.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**Fear, Control and Your Power**

I've written about 'fear' in numerous Matrix 5 segments. Fear is your worst enemy and it is used by both the Dark and the Light polarities as their MAIN weapon in the Game. *Fear is something EVERY Higher Self incarnational series will have to overcome in order to move forward.* There are many types of fear, but it's still the same energy. The difference is that this energy comes in many disguises.

At work today, 2 foreign students (in their 20's) were in an office using a public access computer. Not only were they using it improperly, they decided to start making out at that desk. Needless to say, the office workers were not happy with that scene. One told the two to stop that in this place of business and if they want to make out, they must leave and find a motel. The foreigners ignored the instruction and, shortly after, started up again. The office worker then threw them out. This worker is not a supervisor. Where was the supervisor? In her cubical "listening" and approving of it. The question is, why didn't this supervisor (paid big bucks) come out of her office to supervise and throw them out herself? Fear. While a good paperwork supervisor, she's a poor people supervisor. She was *afraid* to "deny these foreigners services" in a public office. She was *afraid* that someone might sue her for calling them to task for disturbing the office routine by supervising. This is the short version of this story but the point is made. This woman is heavily fear bound and this is just one incident of it.

Fear has been *the* MOST successful weapon used in the world and, especially in the United States. Fear is having a field day in this country. This is being stirred up by both polarities. Fear "terrorists", fear "the unknown", fear "arabs", fear "witches", fear "gays", fear "people acting suspicious (at least in your opinion)", fear people "different" than you and so on. The US is *SO* fear bound that they'll give away all of their power and constitutional rights just so those who are using the fear weapons will "protect" them.

*Giving away one's power to an external deity is a major goal of those who use fear.* Deity doesn't only refer to fictitious gods, aliens and the like, but *also* to ANY external source who seeks it. If you are *controlled by fear*, your body still significantly controls YOU. Fear also feeds those lower astral entities who will do *anything that they can to induce* fear in the 3rd density incarnates.

I've talked to some people who tell me that they aren't afraid of anything. People who say that are putting on a false front. These people have some deep fears that they refuse to acknowledge because they don't want to have to deal with them. They feel, in most cases, that it's a weakness to have fears. It's *not* a weakness to have fears, but *rather it's a weakness to deny them.* You have to *acknowledge them* before you can *handle them* and *relegate them to where they belong.*

Someone may not be afraid of many *physical* situations, but they can be afraid that someone finds out they are lacking in the mental department, for example. Someone with *internal insecurities* (fears), may be like the drag queen in the corner of the bar or a bully who is *hypercritical of almost everyone* that they see. Someone with intellect in one or two fields may fear that people won't think he or she doesn't know "everything". Fearing of 'not being perfect', except that really means *not conforming to others' limits or expectations.* Based on these few examples, you can easily add your own.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

In astrology, the U.S. Moon is in Aquarius, the sign of radical, unpredictable changes. Being a Cancer country, every *change* is an *emotional issue*. Aquarius is the sign of true freedom. Cancer is *not*. It is the sign of *tradition* and *intolerance for change not initiated by itself*. The hippie era of the late 60's is a great example of Aquarius shaking up Cancer. Cancer is not tolerant, it is controlling. Cancers can fear true freedom. You see what the US is doing in the world and that Darkside president, who is also a controlling Cancer, is doing. Both are great at "do as I say, not as I do". And what is their big weapon? FEAR! Fear Iraq, fear Taliban, fear muslims, fear this & that - mantras of the current, appointed president. What does this fear encourage? Giving up your 'rights' - *surrendering your 'power' to an external deity* whose icons include flags, statues and the like. They also talk down to you, "the bad people" the White House reptilian says.

Something to consider is that *when you fear, you WILL attract to you exactly what you fear. This is part of the Game. This is given to you to overcome it*. Only the body-ruled fear death, yet death is the prime cloak the government loves to dress fear in. Another example: I will be in Orlando for Halloween this year. People have said to me (again since my trip to China last April was apparently not enough for them) not only the standard (since 9/11) 'aren't you *afraid* to fly?' but also 'Orlando is on the list of hit sites for <gasp> terrorists - aren't you *afraid* to go?' Hell, no! But, they might *kill* <double gasp> you! *Big fucking deal*. Then I'll be free to summon back my incarnations and proceed elsewhere. It's their *bodies* talking/reacting while the not-mature-enough spirit is along for the ride and, hopeful, will learn from it. Fear of death - the BIG fear of the body.

*Overcoming fear is a LONG process taking hundreds and hundreds of incarnations*. It is a major goal for your Higher Self via the *incarnational streams*. You WILL succeed by your *Awakened Final Incarnation*. *Don't put yourself down* because of fears, but *DO examine them* and *admit them to yourself*. Try and come to terms with them. Attempt to handle them. Education is a good way to start. Fear of spiders, snakes or other creepies? Read up on them and gain an understanding of them. Replace fear with caution. They are *NOT* the same things. Caution comes with *maturity*. Cautions move fears to an understanding level.

If you don't know the difference between fear and caution, do some research on the terms.

If you want to see fear in the eyes of someone, tell them about some of David Icke's topics - child slavery by the government or reptilian shape-shifters, for example. Most will quickly dismiss these topics out of FEAR. Fear because *if they were shown the evidence, they know they'd have to do something about this one way or another* (and there is more than one way to handle this material). And if they *do* show an interest, the most likely response is: *who will save us? (external deity again)* Fear also because *they'd have to face the lie of American 'freedoms' and image*. It's far too heavy of a thing to deal with until you reach the upper Mid-Advanced ranges and beyond. You will also learn how to deal properly with these issues *WHEN you're ready*.

If fear can make you SO used to giving away your power and having others protecting/helping so much that you are nothing more than a dependent on others or a ward of the government, you have become a perfect citizen of the Orion Empire. The queen likes people like this - people who obey and fear - because they are so easily controlled. Consider that, especially in regard to other Matrix 5 materials. "We will think for you", they say. This is a *major dead end* and *very difficult in this time period due to all the technology that hasn't been around since Atlantis sank*. It's EndGame. Be aware of fear. *Take back your power!*



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**Observation: Law of Allowance & Earther 'Freedom'**

The Law of Allowance is the *law of freedom*. You know what the Law of Allowance is if you've read the Handbook trilogy or the Matrix 5 materials. This Universal Law IS *freedom itself*. Keeping this in mind, examine the use of the word 'freedom' on Earth, especially within the US. As you know, the Game warps Universal Laws through *polarities and deceptions*.

You hear the polarity stooges in Washington talk about defending 'freedom'. This is not true. The word 'love' also means 'sex', yet they are *not* related terms. You can love someone without ever having sex with them. You can have sex with someone and not even LIKE them. The same goes for the Game's use of 'freedom'. It does not mean the same thing as the word implies.

*For fascists/christian orthodox*, 'freedom' means *they* are free to subject *you* to their forms of control but, on the other hand, *these people will not tolerate opposition to their control*. They are free to impose their narrow minded *beliefs* on those who could care less. These people also want their *archaic values forced* on those who seek to expand their interests/experiences. The Game loves using the words like 'tradition/family values/society' to attempt to keep you in line and away from allowing your Higher Self to grow.

*For the ultra liberals*, 'freedom' means they are *free to impose* speech limitations and foreign mannerisms on those who just want to be left alone. They want to impose a false tolerance which the Game is using as a disguise to break the US up by language/culture/religion and just about any other divisive means they can think of in the name of *pseudo tolerance*. The Game knows you cannot *force* spiritual Advancement. It must come at your *own* time and at your *own* pace.

The Game uses these *two extremes to create conflict* and all in the name of 'freedom'. This freedom bears NO resemblance to the Law of Allowance. *Desire to control others* is NOT 'freedom'. Imposing your will, whether it be individual, national or global, on another is NOT 'freedom'. Intolerance, an attitude unfortunately TOO common in the US, is of the Game and *not* of the Universal Laws. American 'freedoms' are a real serpents' stew of *lies and deceptions*. So, when you hear the drums of war in Washington and the American Adolph spicing war/Dark polarity rhetoric with the word 'freedom', it is just another attempt to deceive the population. One polarity loves it. The other hates it. Polarity conflict - the core of the Game. The end result is that only Balance is effective and the way of the highest densities.

**Searching For "The Higher Power"**

In this film I saw, an alien asks an Earther woman about all the religious icons in her room. She explains that these items are each connected to a different 'Higher Power' and she's searching for the right Higher Power for herself. The alien asks how will you know when you've found the right one. She responds that she'll know.

The search for the Higher Power has taken Earthers down countless dead ends, such as christianity, judaism, muslimism, hinduism, etc. Churches, synagogues, mosques and all other gathering places for these dead ends are filled with people who *believe* they have found *their* Higher Power. They have been *deceived*. They are currently *lost*.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000–2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

The only Higher Power that should be of concern to *you* is your Higher Self and *no others*. In Robert Monroe's trilogy, he describes his travels (in 4th density and higher) when this huge, glowing being commands Bob to "worship me for I am your god". The entity briefly caught Bob off guard. When he processed the request, Bob knew this was only a resident of this particular density (above 4th). He refused to comply with this unreasonable demand and the being threw a fit while Bob moved on. Read the trilogy if you haven't already.

There are numerous beings who *want* you to give away *your* power to *them*. Regaining your power, both on Earth and beyond, is one of your major goals in order to spiral out of 3rd density Earth. *Power thieves* take the *guises* of priest, minister, president, congressman, rabbi, mayor or anyone in an "authority" position. Instead of these people working for you, *they have taken your power and wind up ruling you*. Most of their time seems to be used to decide on *new laws*, which tell you what you *can't* do. People fall all over someone in authority positions while these elected officials and religious types *should* be catering to you. Why do people fall all over power takers? Repeating: take back your power from these control mongers.

The prime goal is remembering that the **ONLY** Higher Power that you must listen to is your Higher Self. *Any other entity, that seeks your following, is deceiving you*. The loss of connection and knowledge of your Higher Self began when you chose the Earth incarnational route and the genetic scientists from Orion made every effort to keep you from ever finding *shim* again. They failed. They greatly delayed the victory, but in the end they failed.

Your Dominant and, primarily, your Final incarnations are the *keys* to unlocking your higher Self and cement long lost control over your incarnations. Your Higher Self accepted the *challenges* and *rapid growth* achieved only through Earth incarnations. The Higher Self is destined to succeed and this success is realized when the Final Incarnation signals the end of the 3rd density experience and the advancement to higher realms.

### Deity – A Major Power Giveaway

An interviewer on television asks a woman what Thanksgiving means to her and, I swear, *every few words* were followed by the tired phrase: 'I thank god'. *The crediting of your life's benefits to some non-existent, puppet master/mistress deity is probably the most major and unfortunate giving away of one's power.* You cannot advance beyond the 3rd/4th densities as long as you cling to this misplaced loyalty.

The origin of *deity* on Earth arrived with the Orion/Sirian Empires. Ancient Earth humans had no deities. Enter the Empires, who convinced the Earthers, with their impressive *technology*, that indeed they were 'gods'. Once they had divided the humans into genders and slashed/alterd their DNA structures, Earthers became so dependent on the aliens that they were 'thankful' to their deities for what they were given by these Dark beings.

With time, enter the *priesthoods*. These were 'representatives' of Earthers to the aliens. This go-between position was kept even after the overt alien presence on Earth was diminished. Priesthoods are positions of power and control over Earthers and their deception continues today. Of course in the lower ranks of priests and ministers, *they do believe* the manure they shovel at people. However, the Vatican, Westminster Abby, Salt Lake City's mormon leadership and so on *know* exactly where their loyalties lie.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

The priesthoods exist *to continue the myth of deity control and to keep Earthers from discovering who they really are.* It is *you and your interactions with others* that have brought you to where you are, NOT some non-existent or alien gods or goddesses. *Your Higher Self is in control of your life,* not an alien or a fictitious deity. Since you are your Higher Self, if you give thanks, give thanks to yourself and others who you are close to, but mainly to your Higher Self, the real you.

When you reclaim this major lost power, you will run into a lot of flack by *lower incarnates and minions.* What, they say, you don't say 'god bless you'?! You don't credit an external source for everything you have and are?! How dare you wake up! How dare you try and exit the Game! How dare you be true to yourself! Indeed.

Phrases other than 'god bless you', such as references to 'the lord', 'the god/goddess', 'the prophet' are all key to keeping the thumb of religion over your crown chakra. You need to slap this thumb away to gain access to your Higher Self. The thumb is a *filter* keeping much needed truths away from you. This thumb keeps you away from your Higher Self and, therefore, *your true identity.*

So, at this holiday time of the year, *reclaim your power.* If you've advanced far enough to drop the religious horse shit and give thanks to *yourself* and *those who mean something to you,* you have come far toward spiraling out of the Game. Forget mythology and alien meddlers. Thank you, Higher Self.

**Gods: DNA Command & Creation of Them**

'Bow down to god', 'worship god', 'praise god' and countless other power giveaway phrases are heard all too commonly. What is it with gods who need/require worship? If you are all so damned powerful and omniscient, why do you insist on this? To answer these questions requires a 2-pronged reply.

The first is the *origin of deities on Earth..* That Earthers were always looking for deities originally began with the Orion/Sirian Empires genetic rape of Ancient Earthers into genders and subsequent imposing of DNA commands in these new beings that include subservience to their alien masters. Since this original period, other alien groups came to use Earth for their genetic experiments. These aliens showed up in amazing crafts as well as some time/inter-dimensional travelers who likewise came and went in non-common ways. The locals were so taken by these amazing feats that they felt that these beings must be 'the gods' of old. Therefore the idea of superior beings was implanted through DNA commands and direct observation of outstanding technology. These alien 'gods' demanded obedience and subservience, especially the Orion/Sirian Empires. Refer back to Matrix 5 for more on this early period.

America's current 'god crazy' phase with the *pledge of allegiance* shows *the body,* under *alien DNA 'worship god' commands* in over-drive! Where you see someone foaming at the mouth for their 'god' shows either a *minion incarnation* or a *body in control over the immature spirit.* The same goes for the muslims and their *body oriented* god fanaticism. Both are *different expressions of the same DNA command* and they cause the strife the Orion Empire wants to *divide the population.*



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

Once one has Advanced enough, beyond mid-Advanced levels, their spirit learns to override the 'worship deity' DNA command and develop *the ability to see through the lies of the body's commands*. This is one 'problem' that the Orion Empire has observed with Earthers and one of the reasons why they intend to redesign Earther humans into something else. This will not happen. You will have to wait and see how the EndGame develops.

The *second* prong of the answer, to the first paragraph's questions, involves the lower astral AND Monroe level 25. When the Ancient Earthers were split into genders and the DNA command to 'obey god' was installed, the Empire knew *the worship would satisfy on 2 levels, the physical and the astral*. The physical is obvious. The astral involved certain lower *astral beings molding the freely given energies of worship* especially if worshipped in FEAR. This *fed* the lower astral beings. 'Fear of god' is still a common *theme* among religions. The christians will say "if you can't love god, then fear of god will keep you in line". This *fear* is shown in mythical hell fantasies of devils and burnings.

Does mythic hell exist? It *does* exist in the lowest astral due to all the energy put into creating it by those who believe in it. It is merely an *astral creation* unknowingly created by the beings who are the true 'gods' but are not yet aware of their own abilities! One cannot be 'sent' there. One can only 'go' there IF one believes that is where they must go.

The same is true of the religious sectors of Monroe level 25. When I visited that level, there was a section of level 25 for the christians, the muslims, the pagans, the hindus, etc and no group was aware enough to sense/see the others. You can go to the Greek pagan sector and converse with Athena, Hermes, etc and they will tell you that they are who you see. In fact, these are the astral creations by those who worship these beings. The worshipers have created the astral gods who MUST have continued worship/devotion energy to sustain their existence. You can find gods, who no longer have devotees, whose forms are fading away. ALL these pseudo deities WILL eventually return to their formless energy states when Earther Higher Selves leave and move on.

As Monroe says in his books, in the future, level 27 with the great library and healing center will no longer exist because *the need is no longer there*. Likewise will the other levels created by Earther Higher Selves dissipate what was created. The True Gods will have ceased to create at those levels. We will have moved on to new experiences and no longer need to dabble in these areas at that level. So much for you to consider here.

### **A New Perspective On An Alien Order**

When ancient Earth humans were divided into genders, the first verbal command the alien genetic scientists gave was, "We are your gods. You will have *no other* as your god." Through the ages, it has been remembered. In the Middle Ages, it was placed into the common English of the day and after being altered to fit the existing one god religions that emerged. You recognize it as, "I am the lord, thy god. Thou shalt have no other god before me."

Why do they still keep archaic English with those bothersome 'thee/thou' phrases? You may well be told they are now considered 'royal' terms, despite the fact that everyone, who spoke English, talked that way. Thee/thou have evolved into you/your. European royalty decided they were above the common people and clung to those terms in formal speech. The same goes for their alien masters. They consider it a sign of respect for your betters. The



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

christians are big on thee/thou for their alien gods and goddesses. The mormons are likewise. It's all about bowing to some damned deity.

My intent here is not to focus on this but rather to give you something to consider based on the original command. *Everyone with a higher Self should rephrase the command into a statement.* Since there are none of these mythical deities, and forget worshipping aliens, replace the image of 'god' with the eternal and 'sole source of all' to you, your Higher Self. This makes *your Higher Self your 'god'*.

This concept is fully comprehended by awakened Final Incarnations "I am your god" calls you to recognize your real self, your Higher Self, the *ultimate* authority on you and the *creator of all your incarnations*. No one except *your Higher Self* can say that with authority. One of the purposes of the Dark AND Light polarities is to deny you this knowledge and keep you looking for *external authorities* on you and your path. *This is a major block you must overcome*, for you will never find your Higher Self until you look *within*.

"You will have no others as your god" cautions you about looking for *external salvation* as I said above. Your Higher Self cautions you *that looking away from your inner self will prove to be a dead end*. No aliens, mythological deities (they're ALL mythological) or religious leader can 'save' you.

Yes, you *do* get *ideas* and *other input* from external sources, but you must *adapt this input to fit you and your path*. You discard what you don't need and adapt needed ideas to suit you. By doing this (more and more as you advance incarnationally), you form your own Yellow Brick Road that will take you home to your Higher Self, higher densities and the experiences they have to offer in your progression. The best is yet to come!

**Observations: Disruptive Symbol to Chakras - Cross**

"The christian cross is a symbol that will *disrupt any chakra that it is placed over*. It's the structure of the cross that does it. Many wear it around the throat. It will disrupt your throat chakra (clairaudience) making it not operate correctly. Many wear it on a longer chain and it's positioned over the heart. It will disrupt your heart chakra (major positive emotional center and *gateway to higher abilities*). Some wear it on their belts. It will disrupt your solar plexis chakra (defensive systems). I can see why christians wear it since *it symbolizes their slavery to the alien 'deities' and christian mythological beings*. However, why do non-christians wear it as jewelry? I saw a Native American dancer (an outstanding dancer) wearing a huge silver cross over his breastplate as he danced. Nothing sadder than a Native American in total defeat by supporting their conqueror's religion. Similar to American blacks following their former master's mythological religion. The wearing of the cross is encouraged by christian leaders of most of their cults. A notable exception is mormon, who is much better at employing 'curses if you do/don't' on their members.

Those who made wearing a cross 'acceptable' *knew* the effect when they initiated the process. Since religion is primarily concerned with *keeping its sheep in the dark*, they will use any symbols they can to *enhance* that state of darkness.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

If one feels they HAVE to wear a symbol, an equal armed cross inside a circle will not damage any chakra, but can enhance it. This is a Native American symbol, among others. These tend to encourage balance in a chakra or area.

Very Advanced and higher incarnates should be aware of these 2 symbols. I threw out all crosses/crucifixes a LONG time ago. I don't recommend you give them to someone as it will cause them at least subtle damage. Throw them out in the garbage where they belong. I made sure the couple I had were broken first. The Law of Allowance say anyone who wants to wear this destructive symbol be allowed to do so. It's *their* path and *current choice*. Even if the reader of this wants to continue to wear it, do what you feel you must. *Choices are yours*. This information is given so you are *aware* of the *consequences* of it.

**'Tis The Season – Another Look At Religion**

'Tis the season...a fun time, Sagittarius of good times is in force, yet we are drilled with the religious myths of Jesus and his fictitious birth. This, of course, is to remind you (over and over again) that 'you should owe everything' to this false deity who, they say, 'was born for you and died for you'. Spare me from this crap. *This comes from the power hungry priesthoods trying to run every facet of your life*. They don't even want you enjoying this holiday season without the *guilt* of "Jesus is the reason for the season". This is just not so. The season is ancient and Pagan. The Christians couldn't stop it, so they tried to bully their way into it. In fact, Jesus was NEVER the reason for the season, but you need to remove the thumb of religion from your crown chakra to fully realize that.

Another thing about this false deity (who is really *alien*) is the appearance of this creature - he's an old, white man. For all the complaining blacks do about white attitudes, why do they still worship the white god? If God is white, therefore white must be the race closest to/of God and therefore again, the white races must rule the planet as being closest to deity. *This has been what is behind western European conquests throughout history*. This is also pure bullshit and one of the reasons that priests were sent out with exploring ships. Waving their white god in front of the native locals while showing off their European barbaric power. Get the locals to join our church. These converts then become closer to the God-chosen, master white race and removed from the non-converted. Western European conquerors freely quoted their invented *book of rules* (Bible) to enslave others. Yeah, some of the southern US sects have limply apologized for using the Bible to justify slavery, but this doesn't mean that their religion is wrong, only that they used it incorrectly.

The mythical Jesus was a Hebrew, so he would have had black hair and brown eyes, but what do you see instead? A blue-eyed, light brown-haired, western European white man. Satan, the mythological lesser deity, however is always red (good excuse to control the Native Americans, I guess).

Now look at where the Catholics (Orion *queen's* followers) are - *Mary worship*. There is the Legion of Mary and the Marianist Society, all devoted to the worship of the Queen of Heaven. In the song Hail, Holy Queen (we've all seen it in Sister Act), the first line: "Hail, holy queen enthroned above" refers to the Orion queen enthroned above (Mintaka). This song was written by a pope long ago and you better believe the pope's know exactly who their heavenly queen is! She is the central figure in Catholic, Orthodox (Greek/Russian) religions. It is the Orion queen, Mary, and Joseph is the Sirian king obedient to Mary. You don't hear much about Joseph, but Mary is all over the place.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

You can travel all over the higher densities and *never* run into any of these mythological beings *except* on Monroe level 26 and these are simply *astral creations of the worshipers throughout the ages*, and you can run into just about any deity ever worshiped on Earth on level 26, but *not* in higher level. There are no 'angels' and other 'servants of Earth gods'. It's *amazing* how many educated and otherwise savvy people still cling to a *belief in mythological deities*. As for the priesthoods, their *purpose* in life is to *keep people in line through faith and/or fear*. BUT, once you remove the thumb of religion from your life, you will see things far more clearly and priesthoods will have no power over you as you increase the speed of your spiral out of 3rd density Earth.

You have no need of god/goddess or other creature to give your power away to. Giving away your power denies your true salvation, connection to your Higher Self. Your Higher Self is the only road to progression FOR YOU. So, enjoy the holiday season, the lights, the candles, etc. I enjoy the music as well and just change the words to the beautiful religious songs (I prefer the instrumentals in these cases). *Adapt the season to fit you and your needs*. Give thanks to your Higher Self for being in your life and guiding you. ALWAYS look within, not without.

**Observation: Tis The Season – Holidays**

Once again it is the BIG holiday season in much of the world. Today it is geared to celebrate a birth that never happened. Yeah, most Earthers just love fairy tales and this one is no exception. Even though the christians have hijacked this ancient holiday of Yule, the pagan nature of it remains today.

If you are a *South Park* watcher on Comedy Central, you know how the creators just love zapping convention. The movie, *South Park Bigger, Longer & Uncut*, is an outstandingly iconoclastic effort. However to zap those who allow themselves to be body ruled, check out the *South Park* christmas album, *Mr. Hankey's Christmas Classics*. There are many great holiday songs there. Check out track 4: *Dead, Dead, Dead*. Body ID'd persons will be repulsed at the lyrics. The chorus is:

"Dead, dead, dead, someday you'll be dead.  
Dead, dead, dead, someday we'll all be dead."

Wonderful song. Such realistic lyrics. Play this album for your body oriented friends and relatives if you want to see them be uncomfortable.

One other festive song on that album that I will mention is track 16: *The Most Offensive Song Ever*. To a christian, it most definitely is! Unfortunately, while the lyrics for the other songs are in the liner notes, this one is not. Kenny and Mr Hankey sing a song of fictional 'jesus' mother, fictional mary, giving blowjobs because she can remain a virgin by doing so. It is difficult to understand some of what Kenny mumbles, but you can have fun with what you can hear.

On the back of the cd, in the lower left, an *upside down* American flag is placed. The upside down flag indicates a country in distress. This is true. Trey Parker and Matt Stone are two incarnations of Higher Selves having a blast at zapping convention.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

On the other hand, remember what I wrote about adapting what you are taught and making it your own. By the time you are ready for the Matrix 5 materials, you have flushed religion down the toilet, but yet you may still enjoy what you had as a child at the season. There is NO reason why you cannot enjoy it now. Take the icons that gave you pleasure and make them fit who you are now.

I have a 6 foot tall, balsam fir in my house with 500 LED, very low wattage, multi-colored lights on it. My house is festive, comfortable and smells like balsam fir. Co-workers have said to me, "how come you do christmas when you aren't christian?". Break those loops and fences that are around you and don't be intimidated by the riff-raff. Even when I use the word 'christmas', it's just a nice sounding word to me that conjures images of decorated trees, wreaths, etc, although if it were pronounced 'christ mass' instead of 'kriss miss', it would be another story. I adapted what works for me. Keep that in mind for yourself.

The key to these traditional holidays is to make them yours in a way that is comfortable to YOU and fuck anyone else. The independence you show can really fluster them. One traditional holiday that I don't observe is easter - the fertility festival. All those het sex icons: rabbits, eggs, etc - a breeders festival. No thanks. BUT I still may pick up a white chocolate egg because I like white chocolate. When asked what I'm doing for this day, the answer is 'just another Sunday for me', but that's ME.

Just keep in mind, do what YOU feel comfortable with and what makes YOU happy. Triple Ho's for the season!

**Observation: The Game & One-Godders**

The catholics are undergoing an exposure that is *manipulated by the Game*. This is due to the situation where the one-godders *have outlived their usefulness to the Game*. The Game is attacking BOTH christians and muslims (one god religions) in different ways. The Game would have you believe that all muslims are terrorists and christian priesthoods are deviant. Well, there's truth in both thoughts. ALL muslims aren't terrorist, but many are. ALL christian priesthoods aren't deviant, but many are.

The christian priesthoods have been corrupt since they began. Catamites were the priests' sex toys in the early/middle ages. What is going on with the priests today isn't new. It's ALWAYS been going on with them. The churches say 'don't judge the church by the priests'. BULLSHIT. If they say the priest is 'chosen by god', didn't their god know the priest was a pedophile? What does that say about the god who chooses these people as priests? Remember that to your christian friends. Also, the main condemnation of the church is that *they preach against what they are involved with themselves*. Do as I say, not as I do - how very American of them.

The same goes for protestant preachers who are thieves, adulterers, etc. IF they were 'chosen by god', what does it say about their god?!

*One god religions have outlived the Game's usefulness*. The way to rid the world of them is to villainize them in the eyes of the people. *Since most of the incarnates are minions, they are easily manipulated*. The Orion queen intends to reclaim Earth. Ridding Earth of the one god religions, or at the very least, to severely weaken them so they wither on the vine, *is being done on purpose*. Don't go only by the surface headlines of the news. You must look deeper to find out *why*.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**Observations: The "God" of These People**

Don't you ever wonder *why* most of the world, according to the American propaganda mills, worship 'god' but Arabs worship 'allah'? Is allah a different god? Hell, no. Allah is just arabic for 'god' in english. Why don't they say spanish speakers worship 'dios', french worship 'dieu', polish worship 'boze' (pronounced boh-zheh) and so on? They've been manipulating people for ages and this is just *to create an artificial separation*. All the one godders worship the same alien being(s) who they call 'god' in whatever language. The *hindus* worship *other aliens from other groups* including the one that one godders call 'god'. When you examine the trickery and semantics of the Game, you can see the manipulation of the masses (who are asses) and something we must all evolve (spiritually) beyond.

**Observation: Separation of Church and State**

In the US, you hear the phrase 'separation of church & state' and you are meant to be *LI*Eve that 'the tentacles of organized religion are kept at bay by the government'. This is FAR from true, however, with the US based on *deception*, nothing else should be expected.

Here are some examples of the fallacy of the 'separation of church & state':

\*SEX LAWS: What are most laws based on? Religious viewpoints. Take laws on matters of sexual relations, such as sodomy (jewish based horseshit), polygamy (christian/jewish horseshit), age of sexual consent (more religious horseshit) and same gender relations (jewish based horseshit). I've spoken a lot on the gay matter, but sodomy includes both hets and gays. Go to your non-religious dictionary for the definition of sodomy. Sodomy is based on that cockeyed, desert (alien) deities desire that you farm animals have sex for procreation only. Sodom was nuked by a rival alien group and it had nothing to do with sex at all, but the warped nature of those one god religions have perverted that information. It is perversion that generates lies like this in order to control YOU.

The polygamy ban, at least in the US, has its origins with the Orion Empire where a female can have multiple male consorts. This applies *ONLY* to the female. The Sirian Empire is the exact reverse. You can see the Sirian hand in arab countries and in the mormon philosophy. Earth is not yet ready for females to engage in having harems. The attitudes must change first. As the Orion DNA commands continue to have their desired effects on males, the intent is to eventually make the Orion model standard on Earth for those who desire to participate. This is part of the Orion overt conquest of Earth. The mormons never gave up their belief in polygamy. They say it's only a temporary situation where they must obey the laws of the land. They anticipate Sirian control. This won't happen.

Whatever faction has most influence controls what beliefs are reflected in the laws of that land. These are *purely* religious in nature. Similar religious beliefs influence the 'age of consent'. Most of Europe has 16 as the age when it is legal to engage in sex. In some places it is younger. The key is *consent*. Body ID'd persons interested in control and power refuse to consider the Law of Allowance in these matters. *THAT* is their problem. Most teenagers start whoring around earlier than 16. Some start later than that. It's all about consent and control. The teens want to experiment/experience. Adults, refusing to let their children grow up, try to delay the events. What adults should do is explain the consequences of mixed gender sex and what is involved with abortion if they aren't careful. For gay teens,



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

parents should breathe a sigh of relief that pregnancy is not an issue here. They should concentrate on explaining sex as a healthy beneficial activity with stress on cleanliness and condoms.

Laws based on religious (lack of healthy) sexual attitudes have their foundations in the simultaneous, alien incarnations because they know that sex brings Higher Selves in contact, hence the drains/blocks involved in het sex are part of the DNA commands. Gay/lesbian sex makes them crazy because no such drains/blocks exist here, so it becomes <gasp> *evil*.

While I only cover some sex laws here, examine other laws and look for the claw, uh, hand of 'god'. Wake up from the illusions they so skillfully create and maintain.

\*OATHS/PLEDGES: "One nation under god", swearing on a bible and oaths of office are all performed with religious based vows and always with that damned, alien god sticking a nose into everything. *Deity involvement is meant to remind you that you are supposed to be subservient to an external deity.* Give your power away since 'there is a being better than you', they say. It is all concocted smoke and mirrors by the sequential incarnates to prevent (or at least delay) simultaneous incarnates from discovering their true natures. When you pledge allegiance, swear on a bible or take any oath that involves a 'god', *you give your power away.*

As you can see, these oaths (of office, for example) mean *nothing* to those who take them. More deception is involved. Currently, in the White House, is a psychopathic megalomaniac who took his oath to defend and protect the constitution from enemies both foreign and domestic. Instead he has proven himself to be a domestic enemy of the constitution. He and his henchmen/women are stripping away rights in the name of an *artificially created enemy* just as Hitler did in the 30's. Congress *doesn't* honor its oath and *permits* this to happen. This can be analyzed all the way down to local political levels. This is because *there is the illusion that those in power want to have the populace believe.* It's JUST illusion, however.

\*RELIGIOUS OVERSEERS - Yes, these are known as congressional chaplains, military chaplains and other non-religious groups where they "open with a prayer". This is done to keep the 'eye of god' (and you know what *that* means by now) or, at the very least, make you beLIEve that 'some god is watching the proceedings'. Tax moneys pay for chaplains to perform their voodoo in places that they still say 'separation of church and state'. Where's the separation? Chaplains should be removed. If anyone wants to go to church, they are all over like saloons. Indulge in your Game *habits* as much as you want to, there.

Separation of church and state - not hardly. The current Attorney General of the US is living proof of *church controlling state* in a nazified way. It's only going to get worse before it gets better. Observe and analyze. Look for the deceptions and *find the person behind the curtain* to really understand the nature of 3rd density Earth in EndGame.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

**Two-Part Big Leap**

In order to enter the New Reality and participate in its creation, those who wish to MUST take the Big Leap, and it has 2 parts:

1. You MUST realize that ALL religions are control devices that have you looking elsewhere for 'salvation'. This includes: muslim, hindu, the all evil christianity, wicca, paganism and any other religion that has you give away your power to a deity (god OR goddess). Not only must you realize this, BUT also act on it by ending external worships/devotions. Proof is in the action more than the word. You must reclaim your power. As magic is not a religion, this is not included for obvious reasons. However, as the Frosts always say, wicca and paganism are nature RELIGIONS, not magic religions. It's just that wiccans/pagans are open to using magic.

2. After Part 1, you MUST come to realize that you create your destinies. You MUST drop the victim attitude of 'it's everyone else's fault that I am in this situation'. We live in a country of victims today. There will be no victims in the New Reality. You MUST take control of self. If you smoke, for example, don't blame the tobacco companies, stress or whatever. YOU decided to take up that #1 psychic inhibiting habit. It's YOUR fault. Non-smokers have stress too and we don't smoke. Don't whine about little or no psychic abilities if you are the cause of this inhibition because of a nasty drug habit you freely decided to take up. Yes, alcohol and other drugs are also problems, but the tobacco problem is the biggest/widest used. Yes, the government/Dark side is behind it, but you STILL had your free will to decide to take up the filthy habit.

So, you deny all religions have control over you. You take back your power and you look within (to your Higher Self) for guidance/assistance. Use the mantra "I am a human becoming. Help me to become". Use (think) it often. It REALLY helps.

**Rituals**

*Rituals*, as stated in Handbook III, are used by religions and secret societies *to control* a person and to *remind* the person of his or her '*place*'. Religion loves rituals: Go to church every Sunday or GO TO HELL (catholic), for example. ALL religions, both structured and unstructured have rituals to continually remind the followers (correct term for sheep) that they are subject to the whims and moods of their deity AND that *they are not to think themselves anything but subservient* to that deity. "It's a sin to ask that question" I was told more than once in catholic school. "You have to accept that *without question* and just because 'god' says so". Bullshit, but it does keep the vast majority of the sheep in line - fear of their deity.

Rituals, continually practiced, will train the person to be subservient to the deity the ritual is geared to, whether it be jesus, 'god', 'goddess', allah, krishna, buddah or whoever. Kneeling, bowing, using phrases like 'the lord says', 'god says' or 'in god's name' or 'god willing' are all ways to show that someone else has control over your life. These beings only have control over your life IF you chose to give away your power to them. If you chose to reclaim or to retain your power, they have no power over you. The ritual of 'the lord says'...notice how it's always THE lord instead of my lord. If someone wants to have a master, that's fine, but keep him to yourself. It is proper to say 'my lord', in that case, but never accurate to say 'the lord'. 'Our lord' is only accurate when talking to others in the



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

same group of sheep. However, notice that it is a ritual to say that...a ritual to remind you that you are subservient to another being. People who have *reclaimed their power* have NO lords or ladies for *they are a deity unto themselves*.

When someone sneezes, what do they say? "god bless you". This is also a ritual. It's been several years now that I've been telling people not to say that to me when I sneeze. It throws them all for a loop. Why? Because I've interrupted a ritual and refuse to give the *expected* response to it. The incredulity, the shocked looks...you DARE interrupt a ritual ... for...'god'!?! Yep. The 'god' of this world, no matter what name(s) you may give for this deity, has no place in my life. I do not give away my power. However if you seek to have a 'god' in your life, please help yourself, just don't try to include me.

Another common ritual, crossing/blessing one's self upon hearing/seeing something uncomfortable to one's belief system. The crossing ritual reinforces that 'god' is in *control* of you and will *decide* what *you* should be doing. It's like waving garlic at a vampire, theoretically, and by crossing one's self, that person is keeping the unwanted energy away. Geez, forbid that what the person hears or sees might awaken him/her to question the belief system.

*Baptism* is another ritual practiced by many religions in some form or another. Baptism is an initial and initiatory ritual of giving one's power away to a 'god' and acknowledging that the person cannot save himself and needs an external savior. The use of water, sprinkling, pouring or dumping in is symbolic, not of the stated washing away of 'sins' (which don't exist), but of *washing away your responsibility for your own salvation*. Be my shepherd...I will follow...I will obey...just tell me. Talk about avoiding responsibility.

Another ritual involves quoting from the bible to *justify* your actions *instead of admitting self-responsibility*. "The bible says...", "jesus said...", "paul said..." - this said/that said...but what do YOU say? People must toss this *control device* and *take responsibility for themselves*. Not he said/she said, but <I> say, <I> decided, <I> discerned, etc.

*The ritual of confession* to 'god' is another *control device* that busybody priests and ministers can really get off on. Get your sins forgiven. Yeah, right, as Robert Monroe said, there is no sin, no good nor evil, just different experiences. Exactly. Learn from your mistakes or you'll repeat them. Ask for forgiveness from someone you've hurt, but *not* from some damned deity. There is no such thing as sin. There are only experiences that help you grow and mature.

*The ritual of communion* – "eat my flesh and drink my blood". Very cannibalistic, whether literally as with catholics, orthodox and Henry the 8th's church, or symbolic as with lutherans and other protestants. Cannibalism is cannibalism. The ritual is reptilian in origin; sacrificing to the blood thirsty reptilian 'god' to appease him. The reptilian 'god' is still around and is the 'god' people all pray to DESPITE what they may otherwise think. The reptilian wears the mask of 'god the father', 'allah', etc, but take away the mask and watch the forked tongue flick.

*Secret society rituals* are quite complex. Included are the masons, the mormon temple endowment ceremonies, Skull & Bones Society and many others. The rituals are used to bind the membership in obedience. Repeating the rituals is for reminding the membership of what is expected of them and not to become independent of the rules. In the mormon endowment ritual, at one point in the film, Satan turns to the people and says (while a light



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

bar pulls your attention to his eyes), "If these people do not live up to the covenants that they made in this temple today, they will be in my power." Control, give away your power, obey the gods and masters of your fate. Bullshit!

While religions and secret societies have scads of rituals, there are also plenty to be found in *the government* as well. The government "knows what's best". Give away your power and then more of your power and independence so that *the government will give you a controlled life with few upsets and challenges*. Look how many run to the government or other authority figure (boss, supervisor, etc) to solve *their* problems instead of working on a solution *themselves*. Every petty, minor thing that comes up...they run to 'daddy' to make it go away. *You can never learn until/unless you accept responsibility and find solutions*. "He said something I didn't like, so I complained to authority." "He's not doing what I think he should, so I complained to authority." "She gave me a dirty look, so I complained to authority." When are these people ever going to reclaim their power and grow up?

These are just a few examples of ritual. Look at the rituals in *your* life. Look for those that *give your power away to any other person, place or thing*. Examine why you do it. Do you HAVE to do it? If you respond, but 'god'/government/society expects it...then you're doing it for the wrong reason - conformity. "I'd do it, but what would everyone think?" <SIGH> Do it!

### **More on the Sneezing Ritual**

This ritual of the phrase given to someone who has just sneezed is one of the most common rituals in every day life. Why is it used? On the surface, it's a myth formed centuries ago when people were told that part of their essence leaves the body on sneezing. A counter point, more current on the time line, says that the heart stops on the sneeze. Both are incorrect, but what better way for religion to grasp on something that people feared by tossing their deity in to further enhance domination by 'god'? Even in this time, when people know what a sneeze is and isn't, why do they continue to say 'god bless you'? Mindless ritual restating your subservience to a deity. Why 'god bless you' and not 'bite the wall'...or better yet, why anything at all? And why is an expulsion of air from your nose worthy of the ritual and not a fart or a burp? Doesn't your 'god' fart or burp? Yes, the deity does when you know who the deity is behind the mask he wears.

One person, who knows who the deities really are, says he still likes to say 'bless you' because it sounds so nice. Geez, talk about programming. In order to break from control by the deities (and who they REALLY are), you must stop using the rituals approved by them. Since sneezing has nothing to do with death knocking at your door, why do you still say it (if you do)? If you simply can't summon up the courage to break the rules and stop saying it, why not say 'I bless you'. But, that makes me 'god'! Think about it! But that's a SIN to think you aren't a slave of 'god'. Bullshit!

I favor not saying anything when someone sneezes and have been in this mode for a few years now. Mindless phrases are a waste of energy. When I'd sneeze and someone says the phrase, I use to say, 'which god?'. That'd get them. My suggestion is if it happens in public and you sneeze, ignore any use of the ritual to you. If someone else sneezes, ignore it too. Life goes on. Now, if you're asked why you didn't participate in the ritual subservience to 'god', (which isn't likely in public), then you can say why.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

If people choose to perform this ritual, that's fine, but it's not fine to perform it for me or try to involve me in it. Now, if I sneeze and someone I know performs the ritual on me, I tell them 'please don't say that ritual to me, I find that very offensive'. Talk about getting the looks. Why? Because you've interrupted a ritual to deity, you've broken the *pattern* and *once the pattern starts to break down, it spreads*.

### **Reptilian Commands and the Sheeple**

Since I learned some things, I NEVER go to weddings or birthing events. I'll share some of the reasons *why* with you, especially since I shared some info on the gender abomination created by the reptilian genetic scientists. Weddings are a *continuation of the reptilian control started on ancient Earth*. The bible (reptilian command doctrine today) tells how only those 2 genetic flaws - man and woman - that 'god' (read reptilian master) has joined, *let no man put asunder*. It also says by these 2 joining, "they are now as 1." That is a lie and a deception telling them "this is the only way to return" to being the original single type human of ancient Earth. Hell and damnation if you don't follow this warning. All this shit, if you don't *obey the reptilian deities*.

Since those ancient times, it has become *custom*, BUT the *genetic code* in hets and most bi's *still pulses to the reptilian command*. It even screws up many gay physical bodies wanting gay marriage, showing *this* part of the DNA code to be present in many, but not all, gays.

This is *why* most women think they HAVE to get married and why most men think they HAVE to 'settle down'. They are obeying the *reptilian master of their physical bodies*. This is *why* the public 'look down their noses' by the obedient masses to those who don't follow this command and either remain single or just live together. If you find someone you enjoy being with...why marriage? For 'official' (reptilian) *sanction*. This *sanction* has little *lures* to it in terms of 'benefit shares' by the partner with medical coverage. Well, domestic partnership laws are changing that.

Monogamy is also a reptilian command. When people get married, they want to *know* they 'did the right thing', so they make a big to-do over it and EXPECT to be congratulated for it and rewarded with gifts. *This also goes back to reptilian commands for acceptance*. If one doesn't support this horrible event (thinking on a different scale), those who do are shaking their heads. IF you do *attend* a wedding, you are giving your seal of approval to the event and your agreement to it. I believe they should *live together*, NOT get married, so I will not 'certify' the event in any way other than a *sympathy* card, if so moved. Astrologically, it moves the relationship from the 5th house of *lovers* to the 7th house of *enemies* ... and then you want to know *why* so many marriages fail and why there is so much *infidelity* (but that also bring up the subject of *forced monogamy*). The mormon church considers any man over 25 a "threat to society" if they aren't married by this age. Thank you for these kinds of threats. You can *see* they speak for their reptilian masters.

Then there's command #2...breed like roaches! The Mormons don't consider you to have completed your 'duty' to 'god' *until you breed*. The command to breed is to increase the population to provide the reptilians with a larger FOOD source, labor pool and potential fodder for their continual wars and expansions. Married people who don't breed are looked down on. I know one Earth Life Addict who felt he HAS to breed. This is his physical DNA commands overpowering his weaker spirit. The reptilian master is pleased.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

All these “congratulations for breeding” are similar to those for marriage... certifying the deed. I do NOT congratulate breeders for fulfilling their master's commands. If you want to do it, don't try to involve my *acceptance*, cause it's not there to give. Yet, for Earth system involvement, we ALL must go through the *marriage and breeding cycles*. This is part of the learning process for beyond Earth cycles. However, when you get to a Final incarnation, you may get this information (some of which I'm sharing with you) so *you can get some advanced perspectives before your last goodbye to the prison planet*. 99.9% if you won't be ready for this stuff until AFTER your Higher Self has *finished* with 3rd density incarnating. So, if it is uncomfortable to you, just push it aside.

**Observations: Origin of the Custom of Kneeling to Another**

Some examples, on Earth, of kneeling to another person are:

\*Submissive statement to authority/dominant figure, such as conquered soldiers kneeling on the ground before victors; someone involved in some serious begging; cops (take it one step further) by making people prostrate on the ground.

\*Submissive statement to deities such as kneeling to 'god' in church. On one's knees to 'gods' has been going on for millennia.

\*The marriage proposal where a man kneels to a woman.

You can probably think of others, but the bottom line is that kneeling to another is a form of submission. The origin of kneeling to another has its origins in the Orion Empire. Ancient Earthers (pre-gender split) never knelt for this reason. Enter the Orion/Sirian Empires (story in Matrix 5) and their declaration of being deities and kneeling was introduced on Earth. This is an ancient practice in the Empire as well. Since females overthrew male dominance eons ago in the Orion Empire, males have been required to kneel to the female when asking some major event of her.

This kneeling to females was required of males in European traditions, especially royalty which is heavily reptilian. This had been carried to even more ridiculous stages, such as men standing when a woman entered the room, men surrendering their seat for a woman, men taking off their hat to a woman, men altering their speech patterns when a woman 'is present' and so on. All this female catering is a direct result of reptilian Orion culture on Earth. This special status/inequality with western females spread like a plague wherever Europeans went and attempts were made to impose these alien rituals on others with a mixed bag of success.

NO ONE should *ever* kneel to anyone else for these purposes. Kneeling indicates submission. If a man insists on marrying a woman, he should NOT kneel to her like an Orion slave or an Orion male. Tradition, they say. Yeah, a tradition that began in the Mintaka system. Kneeling is placing your head below the other signifying that person is above you. Remember in the King & I how the Thai king demanded that no one's head be higher than his. Kneeling to a woman or man signifies that the one you kneel to is superior to you. This higher head stuff is also carried on by people wearing hats, tiaras, crowns, and other head pieces. (Although the crown is a take-off on the horns surrounding royal reptilian heads.)



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

This ritual is not going to stop on its own *because authority figures are polarity control people and feel superior to everyone else*. Females (Western) feel that they are superior (DNA commands) and will *insist* on more types of submissions by Earther males whose DNA commands will force submission. The only bright spot in this garbage is that 3rd density Earth is nearing its conclusion and all the crap associated with it will be ending, at least for the Earth planetary spirit. So the next time you see a man kneel to a woman for her 'favor', just think Orion whipped. Remember these things when you continue your observations of the fall of Earther humans.

**Game Traps: Ancestor Worship & Genealogy**

In Asia, ancestor worship/reverence is a *tradition*. Genealogy began with royals (Orion Empire lackies) showing their lineage and, thus, their 'right' to be in power. Genealogy today is a main pursuit of the mormon church. Other than the royals (hence alien motivated), why is this falling over ancestors so important? Because The Game wants you to identify with your body and not your spirit, the true you. If you get hung up (and we ALL do in low and mid level incarnations, even into mid-Advanced levels) on the physical line and your false obligations to that line, you will never view yourself as *an incarnation of your Higher Self inhabiting ALL human races on Earth in time periods selected by your Higher Self for specific and general experiences required by your Higher Self*.

You feel *obligated* to do/say things because of the family/clan/dynasty, etc. You are told to do these things BECAUSE of your *physical line*. This is drilled into you as a strong part of The Game *to keep you asleep*. If you KNEW that *the line is nothing but to provide a vehicle* for your incarnation, you *might* not go to war, get married to the 'right' person, breed to prescribed dictates or carry on body-oriented, ancient grudges passed on from generation to generation.

Knowing you are an incarnation from your Higher Self, you recognize that *you are in all these other experiences that The Game says you must 'like' or 'dislike'*. If you are reading this material, you are an arab/african/european/asian/native american, etc, as you are a catholic/protestant/muslim/hindu/buddhist, etc. If you *are* all these people at *different times*, you understand *why* and would never war *with yourself*. However by now you should have gained the wisdom and reason to act significantly different that when you were a mid-level incarnation.

Carrying on traditions for your physical becomes insignificant unless you just enjoy a particular tradition. For example, I decorate at christmas time, but am not a religious of any sort. I have *adapted* that holiday *to fit me* but have NO religious figures connected to the christian subversion of the original yule period. Yet, I have zip to do with easter, which is nothing more than the ancient fertility festivals with religious overtones (fuck like rabbits then praise jesus crap). Fertility festivals are for breeders, not me. *Adapting something to fit you* is a mid-Advanced and above trait.

They may say, "If you don't honor the ancestors" or "If you don't do your genealogy" you will suffer some unnamed fate. I remember once, when I was in Utah, a woman asked me (in a laundromat) if I had done my genealogy. I told her 'no'. She said she knew someone who had completed his back to 'Adam'. Yeah, right. The mormons want people to do genealogy because the aliens are looking for descendants of specific lines. This is why they record/computerize all genealogical information sent to Salt Lake City and store it in the mountain vaults with access to alien bases underneath.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

Know ancestor worship & genealogy *for what it is*. Not only do we ALL go through those stages, we also will ALL grow out of them.

**Orion DNA Commands – “Higher Education”**

In *Time* magazine, Dec 11,2000, a special report on education: The MALE Minority reveals that the enrollment of men has fallen to 44% of undergrads. The articles says that some social critics "blame a dearth of male role models among school teachers and a culture that promotes anti-intellectualism among boys". According to an education analyst in Iowa, "the share of college degrees earned by males has been declining for decades". All of this while the enrollment of females has continued to rise strongly since the early 80's. The higher education of females must occur for Orion purposes, the same as the decline of male higher education is needed.

The Orion DNA commands continue to manifest. The Orion goal of female dominance on Earth fits in with the Mintaka model. Submission to the female by the male is required when Earth fully rejoins the Orion Empire after a long period apart and under the rebel queen. Males are for the amusement/pleasure of the dominant female, a total role reversal of the former centuries.

As stated previously, the wail of gender equality was never the goal but rather the excuse to become dominant. This could never have come about if the DNA command was only in female bodies. A companion command had to be in male bodies.

Education is necessary to develop minds beyond menial roles. This has been known for ages. Now it is not because men are being denied education, but not choosing to be educated. THIS is the DNA command in action. They want their sports and low level amusements, but resist any real mental development. This is increasing and the *Time* article brings it to light. Most will say it's ok, but Final and very Advanced Incarnations will see it as another blight in the plan to suppress the male gender on Earth.

What can be done about this? Really, only a powerful spirit (Final or VERY Advanced) incarnating a body can override the DNA commands. We are nearing the end of an era and, fortunately, the Orion DNA commands will not be allowed to fully come in force. The 2012 date is one of the key ones. Many Final Incarnations are here at this time due to the unique situation on Earth - the swan song of Orion/Sirian meddling. Just when it seems they have it all, it'll all be snatched from them. Some clues to this exist in Monroe's books. Regain your power and prepare to spiral out IF it's your time to do so.

**Obeying The Orion DNA Call**

Michael Moore's book, '*Stupid White Men*', has some excellent commentary and some damning/Orion commentary. He has one chapter condemning the entire white race throughout time. Racial variety is one of the hallmarks of an Earther Higher Self experience. Each race has individual positive and negative traits. THIS SERVES A PURPOSE FOR EARTHER HIGHER SELVES which need the various races for differing incarnational experiences. This chapter in his book is called, "Kill Whitey". Moore's hatred at the white race for fulfilling its role in the Game is part of the sequential aliens' attempts to force conformity.



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

In another chapter of this book, 'The End of Men', Moore blames men for all the ills of the world and absolves women of any guilt. This is PURE Orion DNA command in the male of today. It is SO pure that the Orion queen would be proud of him. In this chapter, Moore falls into the common mythological trap of calling the planetary spirit 'mother nature' and claiming that this spirit is attempting to eliminate all men from the planet. This, of course, is PURE bullshit. Refer to M5 for comments on the fairy tale being called 'mother nature'. The planetary spirit would act against Earthers as a unit, but not against only one gender, of whom Moore is totally in error in blaming.

He believes that the plague of female births on Earth these days is 'mother nature' way of removing males. This is an Orion DNA thing (timed for now) and has nothing to do with the planetary spirit.

In true Orion DNA obedience, Moore says, "Truth be told, I am a better person for having lived my life surrounded by stong, intelligent and loving women". They are perceived, by this type of male, as 'loving' because he allows himself to be dominated and manipulated by them. Note this comment in the same chapter: "Whatever frightening male habits were not exercised by my sisters and mother, these two (wife & daughter) have been merciless in finishing off." "Frightening"? To whom?? Pussy whipped, Orion DNA driven male!

This chapter rambles on blaming men for every possible problem that he could think of. Hell forbid you should also be a white male! He IS but, like Robert Morning Sky, he is in sackcloth & ashes over being male. This, again, is Orion reptilian in origin. The chapter is filled with some truth, numerous half-truths and many outright lies due, most likely, personal research lacking.

I was wondering why such an attack book on Bush & his controllers could come out in these days. Well, I've discovered why and I'm just 1/2 way through the book. It is anti-white, anti-man, elevates females to near goddess staure and, thusly, serves the divisive, polaric, alien DNA agendas. As long as he serves purposes like that, he'll remain around even if he does tweak fascist segments of the country.

When you have reached Very Advanced stages, you will be able to quickly discover where someone is coming from. Harper Collins, a major, mainstream publisher, put Moore's book out because it serves a polaric purpose. IF it wasn't for Val and his tiny Leading Edge, Matrix 5 would have never been published. Luckily, Val's Higher Self was a major part of the M5 project.

**Orion Influence and the Removal of Hats**  
(Special Gold Edition Segment)

Why has it always been that men have been expected to remove their hats at certain occasions, such as in a church, at a funeral or when meeting a woman? Why is it that women never remove their hats for any such occasion?

The wearing of head gear seems to have been with us always. There are the protective reasons such as a helmet (military or sports) or to help ward off the cold or rain. There are ornamental hats, religious hats and so on. With military helmets, Roman Empire being a good example, that have the scrub brush tops or similar - this is a reference to the Orion military with the tops of their heads having a crest of scales. Where this variation exists on ornamental military headwear, it is an imitation of the reptilian military.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

High hats (favored by the Roman church in popes, bishops and certain kings) are meant to give the impression of superiority to their followers or their common people. These also have alien ties in their origins. Crown and tiaras have their origins with the Orion royals as well due to their formation of horns on their heads in a circular pattern. Of course the Orion royals also enhance their horn protrusions, but, nevertheless, this is where crowns and tiaras have their origin.

Back to the original questions at the start of this segment. Why are men expected to remove their hats when women are not? This is due to the Orion Empire where females rule and males are very second class. The removal of the hat is a symbolic acknowledgement of the superiority of the female rule, hence men have always been expected to take off their hat when meeting a woman. This was happening on Earth even when men were in full control. It was a practice of European Earther royalty (part of the chivalry nonsense) to mirror Orion mannerisms, although the original reason for doing this was known to a relative few. When the Orion Empire was openly on Earth, the newly formed humans had to incorporate Orion customs as much as they could. These became traditions even after the changes that followed.

As far as men taking their hats off in church - since the Orion queen and Sirian king are the 'gods' of Earth, men must show respect for them by removing their hats. This is a symbol of subservience. And, why don't the women take off their hats? Because the Orion females dominate the Sirian Empire. The Sirian king bows to the Orion queen. In a microcosmic form, the Earther male bows to the Earther female, especially today when the Orion DNA commands are SO active in much of the world especially in the USA, Canada and Western Europe. Remember these things if you are a hat wearer and be aware of the real reasons of these 'traditions'.

### **Sexual Prisoners**

The talk radio today was discussing a known Hollywood personality's comment that she refuses to have sex with her husband any more. To this several other women called in to agree. OK, if you don't want sex any more, then your husband is free to find it elsewhere. No? Well, if you won't give him what he needs and refuse to allow him to get it elsewhere, you're guilty of having someone as a *sexual prisoner*. This is the reverse of using someone for sex by instead keeping him from having sex. With a *male*, if there's no sex, there's no romance. This is a further development of the Orion DNA *command* to be at the female's whim.

A man should not put up with this Pampered Cow Syndrome. All she's doing is living off you all at her control. If you don't have the spirit to throw the cunt out and make her earn her own living, you probably deserve what you are getting. It's all a learning process, after all.

This *control* is one of the main reasons why I'm against marriage. Women use it as a license to control a man's life (today) more than the other way around. This is why I do not attend ANY weddings, either het or gay. Why gays want to imitate hets by getting married is a beyond me. As I've said earlier, *marriage is a control device originating with the Orion genetic scientists* when they divided Earthers into genders. The perversion of marriage, unfortunately continues today, but is far less 'sacred' than in the past.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

More marriages are broken (they should have a picture of the wedding photo in the divorce columns). In the name of 'love' (read instead 'lust'), people form unions that, in the majority of cases, rapidly disintegrates when the sex becomes routine. This problem wouldn't exist if they just lived together for as long as they wished, then went their separate ways once done. Ancient Earthers had no such trap as "marriage".

In most cases, it's the controlling nature of the female that gets in the way. In some remnants of the Sirian system, it's the male's controlling. The Sirian system (in the US) has been rapidly giving way to the Orion system with the impending return of the queen. This, unfortunately, gives us countless 'queens' here waiting for their mistress (unknowingly).

Under the innocent-seeming guise of 'equality', females have bullied their way into dominance and have broken down society. When women were real women, the country had FAR fewer problems since they raised the family and created a home. Due to Orion DNA commands, females desire to be males (but yet retain the status of females) have caused much of the chaos in the country today.

This is not something that can be corrected. In the interesting book, *Surrendered Woman*, the female author tries to reverse the Orion commands. In the book, *The War Against Boys*, another author tries to bring to light the effects of the Orion commands. While these, and other, efforts are interesting, they will prove to be futile. The control/dominance/me-first machine known as woman will not reverse. The evening news shows how American style feminism is spreading like a doomsday virus into China, India and Nepal. The Orion DNA command will cover the Earth, if unchecked by the upcoming Events.

There can be no return to the past. *The past is gone*. However the horrors of a female dominated Earth will not be realized either, thank Destiny. We are in the darkness of 3rd density Earth. The darkness will be banished, but it'll get darker before the dawn in the next several years. Once this is ALL wiped away, only then can matters be put right. The Orion plan is, fortunately, doomed to fail. Neither will the Sirian plan reassert itself. It will be a whole NEW era. One that will banish forever the horrid state of affairs Earth has known since the Orion genetic scientists started their meddling on Earth. The keeping of sexual prisoners by females or males will end one way or another as will other crimes against the Higher Self. One reason we, with Higher Selves, are here - to learn from the terrible errors/experiences on Earth so they won't be recreated in your individual Higher Self's future when you choose to create worlds.

### **Dark Device**

This device is seen all too often, unfortunately. It will not exist in the New Reality. It originates in the Orion Empire.

- It originated as a symbol of bondage.
- It continues as a symbol of bondage and ownership.
- Device of the Dark side
- Device of control
- Device of possession
- Device of the damned
- Device causing soul piece loss
- Device of entrapment
- Device of surrender of individuality



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

- Device of oppression
- Device of the House of Enemies (astrological 7th house)
- Device of dominance
- Device of submission to another's will
- Device of binding
- Device of surrender of freedom

What is this device? It is a wedding ring! It should be worn through the nose by those trying to impress their alien masters!

**A Comparison: Body Orientation vs. Spirit Orientation**

Congratulations and sympathy, are two types of cards usually sent to people who have had an event. Here's a mini-list showing what is sent for which occasion *based on body* or on AWAKENED *spirit orientation* in the current time period:

BODY – Congratulations: Birth, Wedding, Engagement, Graduation, Religious event

AWAKENED SPIRIT – Congratulations: Death, Divorce, Separation, Graduation FROM religious control

BODY – Sympathy: Death

AWAKENED SPIRIT – Sympathy: Wedding, Birth, Engagement, Baptism, or other religious event

Of course those who are body ruled will fail to understand the “Why’s” for this list. Once they are awakened, they WILL not only understand, but also agree!

**Other Reptilian Commands**

All reptilian commands to their Earth gender slaves deal with divide and conquer. It is to their benefit that the division increases to keep fighting internal and *not to the source of the problem* - the reptilians themselves and their lackeys.

*Organized religions are one of their prime hate-generators.* Using today's organized religions, the reptilian 'god' of the bible commanded the Israelis to conquer and kill many times. In one case, 'god' was so mad that the Israelis DIDN'T kill enough (they were supposed to kill ALL cattle and people) that the 'god' threw a 'hissy fit' through his prophet.

“In the name of god” has been used to start wars *for no other reason than people had different attitudes.* This 'god' also fights on *both* sides. Look at WWI where 'god' was “helping” *both* sides. It's true, because this 'god' is the reptilian master in whose interest it is to keep Earthers *divided*. Imagine what it'd be if more people *refused* to fight. Some did during the Vietnam war, and see what *ridicule* was heaped on them for going to Canada.

Today, the reptilian lackeys of *media* are trying to stir up more violence in places like East Timor, “They're killing catholics!” was heard on TV many times. The continuing violence in Northern Ireland is christian vs. christian. You don't hear the TV cry “they're killing catholics” or “they're killing protestants”, do you? That's because, in the East Timorese



*MATRIX V: The Gold Edition*  
*Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier*

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

case, it's muslim and, with the US/England being primarily christian dominated, they play the song that they know will work best to stir up fear, anger and a desire for revenge, all of which involve *reptilian and Dark side emotions that feed the 4th density reptilians*.

In the US, the *division* goes further than religion: it's race, sexual orientation, clothing, income levels, hair lengths/styles, voting preferences, neighborhoods, gangs, and just about any other differences you can think up. Instead of celebrating diversity, they condemn lack of conformity, but still claim that America is the "land of the free." Yeah, right. The christians think that means only *they* are free to spread their religious poison for the reptilians and that "no other religion" has that "right". The christians want *everyone* to be like them. Why not be happy being what you are? Misery loves company! What *tactics* are used? *Fear* (hell, devils, death) is the prime method of *conversion and control, once in the fold*. These are *reptilian tactics*. Generate that *fear* to feed the 4th density reptilians.

The *dramas* have increased to a maddening crescendo. In order to spiral out of here, you need to cut yourself off from *participating* in the reptilian orchestrated dramas. Observe, take note, but *restrain from being swept up in the tidal wave of fear*. What's the worst that can happen (according to what most people think)? The body dies. So, what! The spirit lives on. There is no hell, no heaven. All that is a lie *to control the masses*. *There is an eternal progression, new experiences, new knowledge and new places to explore completely different than Earth*. The 4th density reptilians won't be hanging around you or your home *if there's no fear being generated*. They'd starve. But in homes caught up in the dramas, such as school shootings, murders and other TV channeled, fear causing dramas - people generating the fear are putting out a dinner invitation to the 4th density reptilians and they NEVER turn down a free meal.

Robert Monroe, in *Ultimate Journey*, said that any attempts to remake the Earth into a different model will be met with failure because this is the way it's supposed to be at this time. This is what it needs to be so that those incarnating here can gain a wide variety of experiences. Earth WILL regain its pristine condition, but *only after* cataclysmic changes. There IS a progression to what is happening. It WILL *all* change, but not peacefully. It will change rather *dramatically*. There is *fear* from Light-siders *over this*. *The reptilians thank you for that fear*. The changes should not be looked at with fear. You are NOT your physical body. Your physical body is only an *extension* of you, your "Halloween costume" of *this* incarnation.

The lie that "you're ONLY HUMAN" is a reptilian deception, as is "you only have one life". You only have one life as Bill or Betty, but will have MANY others as Lou or Phyllis or Jim or whatever. Close out the noise of the reptilian *propaganda machines* and their *lackeys*. Go *within* and find *your* truth. It's there.

### A Deeper Look – New Age Religions

New Age religions have been gaining ground in recent years while the outdated mythologies of christianity are on the decline, although not gracefully! The New Age religions are tolerant of a wide range of beliefs and sexual orientations. On the surface, these new beliefs look great and are a tremendous improvement over guilt ridden, blood and pain drenched christianity. On the Travel Channel's *Lonely Planet* series, the traveler to the Baltic states commented positively on the upsurge of pagan religions especially in Lithuania, for example.



**MATRIX V: The Gold Edition**  
**Quest of the Spirit – The Ultimate Frontier**

© 2000-2003 Leading Edge International Research Group. All Rights Reserved.

Move past the surface relief that New Age religions bring to people who are sick of christian oppression and look at root beliefs from a standpoint of spirit as opposed to body. New Age religions, like the one god religions, encourage the cornerstone of the Game - that two genders exist beyond the 3rd density into the higher densities all the way up to a polarity of god and of goddess. They also believe in a female (goddess) superiority while paying lip service to the male (god). This is from the Orion Empire where the female dominates the male in all phases of social, religious and political areas.

The movement from male dominated religions to female is necessary, *from the Orion perspective*, at this time as the Orion Empire has immediate plans to subjugate Earth into their Empire overtly for the first time since Orion and Sirian genetic science created genders on Earth. Therefore, it is necessary for those who are their body to conform to the queen's will.

The catholic church, the most pagan of the christians, has done much to prepare the way by its worship of the mythological mary goddess. The feminist movement, with its Orion input, has used the false banner of gender equality to rapidly advance its secret agenda of female superiority. Consider that for a while...

Both of these elements (plus others including a desire to be free from repressive christianity) have given New Age religions a tremendous boost. The wiccan revival, Dianic traditions and modern paganism, while allowing for greater expression, have increased the genderization of the spirit to heights never seen. Yes, they are similar to the oldest religions of post-Atlantis, but now the control and center is female, the Orion model and this has bled into all areas of Western life with its core in the US and Canada.

The same goes for the mass 'training' in shamanic areas. This very commercial training is part of the New Age religion plans. Students are taught of the genderization of ALL spirits (male and female guides, 'Mother' Earth, 'Mother Nature, etc). They are taking people, with much glitz and glamour, into the female domination. This mass shamanism is not true shamanism. It's also like Americans bull in a china shop approach to the astral. This can get these students into significant trouble and open gates to the unwanted. Sounds like more Orion manipulation! It serves Orion's agenda and that's why it is permitted and encouraged. This is not true shamanism.

The New Age religion is the newest cage for the spirit, the real you. By keeping you occupied with this 'new' mythology, it will become difficult to see spirit as it is, a single, non-polarized intelligent being. Not a yin/yang model showing male/female equal but separate, but rather the perfect blending of yin/yang before it was artificially separated.

Dead people carry the 'I am my body' into the 4th density astral where they cling to their 3rd density, physical identity, male or female. *They try to continue the Game on the astral. If you are your body on the astral without knowing who you really are, you will eagerly choose reincarnation.*

If you, while incarnated, know *who* you are AND *act accordingly* by not playing in the Game unless necessary (examples: creating children, marriage and the 'need' for the opposite gender - all mainstays of the Game), *you can move beyond the Game forever.* This is the Final Incarnation.